Miklós Törkenczy
Practical Hungarian Grammar

CORVINA
Contents

Abbreviations ................................................. 6
Pronunciation, letter-to-sound correspondences .......... 7
Articles .................................................... 16
Nouns ................................................. 19
Noun stems ............................................. 30
Postpositions ......................................... 41
Pronouns ............................................... 44
Adjectives and Adverbs .................................. 57
Numerals .................................................. 64
Verbs .................................................... 68
Definiteness: the Definite and Indefinite
Conjugations ............................................. 69
The Present Tense ....................................... 73
The Past Tense .......................................... 78
The Conditional ......................................... 86
The Conjunctive-Imperative ............................... 92
The Future ............................................. 104
Usage: Tenses, Conditional,
Conjunctive-Imperative ................................ 106
Non-finite forms ......................................... 111
-ik Verbs ............................................... 116
Verb Stems ............................................. 119
Verbal Suffixes ......................................... 138
Preverbs ............................................... 141
Word Formation: Derivational Suffixes .................. 146
Constructions and Sentences ............................ 160
Index of Subjects ...................................... 173
Index of Words ......................................... 177
Index of Derivational Suffixes ......................... 184
1. Pronunciation, letter-to-sound correspondences

1.1 The alphabet

The Hungarian alphabet has 44 letters. They are listed below together with the pronunciation of the name of each letter in Hungarian. The transcriptions appear in the International Phonetic Alphabet (IPA).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>Pronunciation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>[a:]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>á</td>
<td>[aː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>[beː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>[tsɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cs</td>
<td>[tsɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>[deː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dź</td>
<td>[dzeː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dzs</td>
<td>[dʒɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>[ɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>é</td>
<td>[ɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>[ɛːʃ]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>[ɡɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gy</td>
<td>[ɡɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>[haː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>[iː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>[iː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>[kaː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>[elː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ly</td>
<td>[ɛlː(ipsilon)]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>[emː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>[enː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ny</td>
<td>[ɛnː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o</td>
<td>[ɔː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ó</td>
<td>[ɔː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td>[peː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>q</td>
<td>[kwɔː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>r</td>
<td>[ɛrː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>[ɛʃː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sz</td>
<td>[ɛʃː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t</td>
<td>[teː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ty</td>
<td>[ɛɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>[uː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ü</td>
<td>[yː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>y</td>
<td>[ɛʃː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v</td>
<td>[veː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w</td>
<td>[duplɔveː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>x</td>
<td>[iks]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>y</td>
<td>[ipsilon]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>z</td>
<td>[zɛː]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zs</td>
<td>[zɛː]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that in the pronunciation of the name of a vowel letter, the vowel is long even if the name refers to a short vowel sound. Thus, the last vowel letter in hosszú ú ‘long ú’ and rövid ú ‘short ú’ are spelt differently, but are both pronounced with a phonetically long [yː] (unless one wants to emphasize the difference). Note also that the names of consonant letters that consist of a single closed syllable are pronounced with a final long consonant (e.g. r = [ɛrː], l = [ɛlː], etc.) unless the syllable ends in a consonant cluster x = [iks].

Acute accents on vowel letters represent length (and never stress). Thus, i is the long counterpart of i, á is the long counterpart of ť, ó is the long counterpart of ŏ, etc.
1. Pronunciation, letter-to-sound correspondences

Consonant letters (other than q, w, x, y) can be doubled to denote phonetically long consonants, e.g. hall [hol] ‘hear’, óló [oló:] ‘scissors’, csépp [tsép:] ‘drop’, roppan [ropan] ‘crack’, kinn [kin:] ‘outside’, enní [ení:] ‘to eat’, etc. In the case of digraphs only the first letter is doubled to express length, e.g. rúzzsal [ruz:zal] ‘with lipstick’, megyy [mej:] ‘sour cherry’, könny [kónt:] ‘puss’, klassz [klasz:] ‘great’ etc. In a few words consonant length is not indicated by the spelling: e.g. egy [egy:] ‘less’ [lesz:]; This is always the case with one-syllable words that end in ch (a ‘foreign’ digraph): e.g. pech [pex:] ‘bad luck’, krach [krax:] ‘breakdown’, stich [stix:] ‘glitch’, etc.

The consonant letters q, w, x, y are ‘foreign’ the sense that they only appear in foreign or archaic words such as Wesselényi [vesle:ni] (family name), xerox [keroks], yoghurt [jokhurt], quattrocento [kvo:ro:tentso:], etc. These letters cannot be doubled.

1.2 Vowels

Hungarian has the following vowels:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sound (IPA symbol)</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>Example</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[i]</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>hisz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[iː]</td>
<td>í</td>
<td>tíz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[y]</td>
<td>ű</td>
<td>út</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[yː]</td>
<td>ú</td>
<td>rás</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[ɛ]</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>nem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[ɛː]</td>
<td>é</td>
<td>fél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[o]</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>öt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[oː]</td>
<td>ó</td>
<td>hős</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[u]</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>fut</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[uː]</td>
<td>ú</td>
<td>súly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[o]</td>
<td>ő</td>
<td>fog</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[oː]</td>
<td>ó</td>
<td>szól</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[ɛ]</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>nagy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[ɛː]</td>
<td>á</td>
<td>nyád</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In Hungarian, a vowel letter typically has a constant phonetic value, i.e. generally there is a one-to-one correspondence between vowel letters and vowel sounds. As a rule, a given vowel sound is represented by the same vowel letter, and a given vowel letter always stands for the same vowel sound. Irregular exceptions are proper names with archaic spelling, e.g. Dessewffy [des:efi], Dőry [döri], etc.

1.3 Consonants

Hungarian has the following consonants:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sound (IPA symbol)</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>Example</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[p]</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>pék</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[b]</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>bakó</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[t]</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>pata</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[d]</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>ad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[c]</td>
<td>ty</td>
<td>latyák</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[ gà]</td>
<td>gy</td>
<td>megy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[k]</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>lakat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[g]</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>gép</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[f]</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>kefe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[v]</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>teve</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Somewhat more regular differences between the spelling and the phonetic value involve length (as opposed to quality). This length difference may be systematic:

(i) Hungarian words/stems cannot end in short [o, ő], so loans ending in ō are regularly pronounced with [ɑː]: e.g. quattrocento [kvatro-tentso:] ‘quattrocento’, anno [onó:] ‘anno’, mono [mno:] ‘mono’, etc;

(ii) in colloquial standard Hungarian words/stems of more than one syllable are pronounced with a final short [y, u] (even) if they end in a vowel letter spelt with a long ű, ú: compare tű [ty:] ‘needle’ and gyűrű [jyu:ru] ‘ring’, bú [bu:] ‘sorrow’ and ágyú [a:jyu] ‘cannon’, etc.


There are no diphthongs in standard Hungarian, so all adjacent short vowel sounds are pronounced as separate syllables: kialókil [kialokul:] ‘develop’, fida [fida:] ‘that of his son’s’, etc. Adjacent identical short vowels other than e, a can be pronounced as separate identical vowel sounds or as the corresponding long vowel: e.g. vákuum ‘vacuum’ [vakuum:vakuum], zoología ‘zoology’, [zoekologia:zoologia], (cop:pare leesik ‘fall down’ [leesik] but not [leesik]). Again, some archaically spelt proper names are exceptional, e.g. Gaál [ga:l], Wehres. [veres], etc.
1. Pronunciation, letter-to-sound correspondences

| [s]  | sz  | szép |
| [z]  | eż  | |
| [f]  | s  | has  |
| [ʃ]  | zs | zsák |
| [tʃ] | c  | lecke |
| [dʒ] | dz  | dzéha |
| [dʒs] | cs  | csók |
| [dʒzs] | dzs | dzéssz |
| [m]  | m  | láma |
| [n]  | n  | nem  |
| [ɲ]  | ny  | enéleg |
| [l]  | l  | kal  |
| [ɾ]  | r  | répa |
| [j]  | j-ly | jó, folgó |
| [h]  | ha, doh |

Each of the consonant sounds above exists in long (geminate) form as well, e.g. [nː] femn ‘up’; [tsː] hecs ‘prank’; [ʃː] hall ‘hear’; etc. In spelling, this is indicated by doubling the consonant letter or the first letter of the digraph that stands for the sound: hecs ‘prank’, mecs ‘match’.

Within the word h is pronounced [h] before vowels (e.g. ha ‘it’, rokhadt ‘rotten’, dohkos ‘musty’) and [x] before consonants and at the end of the word (e.g. doh ‘musty smell’, dohtol ‘from the musty smell’).

Note that in the word cseh ‘Czech’ the letter h is not pronounced before a consonant and word-finlly: cseh ‘Czech’ [tsɛ], csehtol ‘from (a) Czech’ [tsɛːtɔl], but csehek ‘Czech, pl.’ [tʃɛhɛk]. Other words which can behave in the same way (but have an alternative pronunciation with pronounced h before a consonant and word-finlly) include jih ‘sheep’, méh ‘bee’, cěh ‘guild’, důh ‘anger’, růh ‘scabies’, oláh ‘Wallachian’.

The consonant letter to consonant sound correspondence is quite constant: a given sound is usually spelt with the same letter (combination), and vice versa a given letter (combination) usually stands for the same sound. Unsystematic counterexamples are some archaically spelt proper names (e.g. Széchenyi [szɛːtɛːni], Kossuth [koʃut], Törkenyzi [tɔrkanzı]), foreign spellings (e.g. pecz [pɛts] ‘bad luck’, Herz <brand name> [hɛrsts]) and the sound [j] which is (unpredictably) sometimes spelt as j (hajó ‘ship’) and sometimes as l (folyó ‘river’). Assimilations that are not indicated by the spelling are systematic ‘counterexamples to the above rule. The major ones are the following:

1.3.1 Regressive voice assimilation

The voiceless obstruents [b, d, j, g, dz, dʒ, v, z, ʒ] change to their voiceless counterparts [p, c, k, ts, tf, f, s, ʃ] respectively, when followed by the voiceless obstruents [t, c, k, ts, tf, f, s, h]: e.g. dobom’ [dɒbɒm] ‘I threw it’; can give ādhat [ɒdhaːt] ‘can give’; egytől ‘from the bed’ [ɛjtːɔl]; foktam [fɒktɔm] ‘I held it’; etészhet [ɛtʃeːsɛt] ‘may train’; szőtvam [sʃʃtʃam] ‘I smoked it’; mézől [mɛʃtɔl] ‘from honey’; rúztol [ʃʃtʃɔl] ‘from lipstick’; etc.

The voiceless obstruents [p, t, c, k, ts, tf, f, s, ʃ] change to their voiced counterparts [b, d, j, g, dz, dʒ, v, z, ʒ] respectively, when followed by their voiceless obstruents [b, d, j, g, dz, dʒ, v, z, ʒ]: e.g. képzés [kɛpʃɛʃ] ‘training’; hétből [hɛtboːl] ‘from seven’; zsából [ʒasboːl] ‘out of (the) bag’; hetrecben [kɛtɾɛbɛn] ‘in (the) cage’, ősből [ɒʃboːl] ‘from (a) carpenter’; széfben [ʃɛfbɛn] ‘in (the) safe’; mézsől [mɛʃzboːl] ‘out of time’; haszba [haʃzba] ‘in (the) stomach’; etc.

Note that [v] does not cause voice assimilation (i.e. the voiceless obstruents [p, t, c, k, ts, tf, f, s, ʃ] preceding [v] remain voiceless: nyolvan [nɔltʃɔvæn] ‘eighty’; látvány [laːtvæn] ‘spectacle’; etc.) and h does not undergo voice assimilation (i.e. it does not become voiced when followed by a voice obstruent ([b, d, j, g, dz, dʒ, z, ʒ]: e.g. dohbol [dɔxboːl] ‘from (the) musty smell’).

1.3.2 Degemination (shortening of long consonants)

Long consonants become short when preceded or followed by another consonant; e.g. oktal [ɔktɔl] ‘with a nude’, varram [varɔm] ‘I sewed’, othon [ɔtɔn] ‘home’, etc.

1.3.3 Affrication (sz, s assimilation)

When the stops [t, d, c, j] are followed by [s], the combination is pronounced as the geminate affricate [ts]: e.g. metszet [mɛtsɛt] ‘etching’; dödőször [dɔdɔʃɔr] ‘for the fifth time’; négyeszer [nɛgyɛʃer] ‘four times’, etc.

When the stops [t, d, c, j] are followed by [ʃ], the combination is pronounced as the geminate affricate [ʃ]: e.g. kétség [kɛʃtʃeg] ‘doubt’; fáradtság [færʃtʃag] ‘trouble’; egység [ɛjtʃeg] ‘unit’; etc.
1. Pronunciation, letter-to-sound correspondences

1.3.4 Palatalization (f assimilation)

[t, ð, c, j, n, l] become [c; j, c, j, ñ, ñ; ñ] respectively, when followed by [j]: e.g. lájta [lász6] 'she sees it'; adjá [adz6] 'she gives it'; bátya [baz6] 'his/her elder brother'; nagyfa [n6sz6] 'most of it'; szánja [sász6] 'his/her sleigh'; hánja [hánz6] 'she throws it'; tolja [tój6] 'she pushes it'; etc.

1.3.5 Nasal place assimilation

The nasal [n] becomes [m] before [p, b, m], [n] before [c, j, ñ], and [ç] before [k, g]. This is obligatory within the word (e.g. angyal [ánzol] 'angel'; gong [gonç] 'gong'), but optional across a word boundary (szénpor [szénp6r, szénp6r] 'coal-dust'; nagyon káros [n6z6nka6r6j, n6jo6n ka6r6j] 'very harmful'; olyan más [ój6m6sz6f, ój6m6sz6f] 'so different', etc).

1.4 Vowel harmony

In Hungarian most suffixes harmonize with the stem they are attached to, which means that most suffixes exist in two or three alternative forms (alternants) differing in the suffix vowel, and the selection of the suffix alternant is determined by the stem vowel(s).

The basic facts are the following. Vowels either belong to the front set (i, ì, ü, ū, e, é, õ, ô, ã, ã) or the back set (u, ú, o, õ, a, ã). Front vowels are either rounded (û, ū, ô, ô) or unrounded (i, ì, e, é).

Suffixes may be

a) Non-harmonic

These suffixes have just one form, which they do not change regardless what the stem vowels are: e.g. -ig 'until', -ként 'as', -kor 'at', -né 'Mrs.', etc;

b) Harmonic two-form

These suffixes have two alternative forms, one with the front vowels and another containing one of the back vowels: e.g. -ban/-ben 'in'; -tól/-tól 'from'; -ill-ül 'in [a language]', etc;

c) Harmonic three-form

These suffixes have three alternative forms, one with the back vowel o, another with the front unrounded vowel e, and a third with the front rounded vowel õ: e.g. -hoz/-hez/-höz 'to', -oni/-en/-ôn 'on', etc.

According to the rule of Vowel Harmony:

i) Back vowel stems (those that only contain back vowels) take the back alternants of the two-form and three-form suffixes:

- -ban/-ben 'in'  
  -hoz/-hez/-höz 'to'

- házban 'in (the) house'
  házhoz 'to (the) house'

ii) Front vowel stems (those that only contain front vowels) take the front alternants of the two-form and three form suffixes:

- -ban/-ben 'in'
  -hoz/-hez/-höz 'to'

- kertben 'in (the) garden'
  kërthez 'to (the) garden'

iii) Mixed vowel stems (those that contain back vowels and front vowels) generally take the back alternants of the two-form and three-form suffixes:

- -ban/-ben 'in'
  -hoz/-hez/-höz 'to'

- tányérbán 'in (the) plate'
  tányérhöz 'to (the) plate'

- betyárban 'in (the) outlaw'
  betyárhoz 'to (the) outlaw'

- papírbán 'in (the) paper'
  papírhoz 'to (the) paper'

- világban 'in (the) world'
  világhoz 'to (the) world'

If the last vowel of a mixed stem is e and there is a back vowel in the preceding syllable, some stems take suffix alternants with a front vowel (e.g. októberben 'in October'), others vacillate (e.g. dzsungelband/dzsungelben 'in the jungle').

iv) Stems with rounded front vowels (û, ū, ô, ã) in their final syllable take the rounded front (õ) alternant of the three-form suffixes:

- -hoz/-hez/-höz 'to'
  -oni/-en/-ôn 'on'

- körhöz 'to (the) circle'
  körön 'on (the) circle'

- fülhöz 'to (the) ear'
  fülön 'on (the) ear'
1. Pronunciation, letter-to-sound correspondences

Note that some three-form suffixes have the unrounded front alternant after Lowering Stems: compare the plural suffix in fülök ‘ears’ (a lowering stem) and körük ‘circles’ (a non-lowering stem). See the discussion of Lowering Stems in Section 4.1.

Anti-harmonic stems: there are about 60 exceptional front vowel stems (most of them with í/i, some with é) that take the back alternants of the two-form and three form suffixes:

strhan ‘in (the) grave’  strhöz ‘to (the) grave’

Examples include:
cél ‘aim’  célozm ‘my aim’
derék ‘waist’  derekam ‘my waist’
férfi ‘man’  férfiak ‘men’
fíng ‘fart’  fingok ‘I fart’
fiú ‘son’  fiam ‘my son’
gyökö ‘lizard’  gyököm ‘my lizard’
héy ‘crust’  héjam ‘my crust’
híd ‘bridge’  hidam ‘my bridge’
hív ‘call’  hvom ‘I call’
húsk ‘get fat’  húzom ‘I get fat’
indít ‘start’  indítom ‘I start’
if ‘bow’  fiqm ‘my bow’
ir ‘write’  írom ‘I write’
iszik ‘drink’  iszom ‘I drink’
nýl ‘arrow’  nyilam ‘my arrow’
nýlik ‘open’  nyilhá ‘may open’
nýit ‘open’  nyitom ‘I open’
sír ‘cry’  strom ‘I cry’
sír ‘grave’  strom ‘my grave’
szid ‘scold’  szidom ‘I scold’
szív ‘inhale’  szivom ‘I inhale’
visít ‘scream’  visítom ‘I scream’
zsír ‘fat’  zstrom ‘my fat’

1.5 Final a, e lengthening
Stem-final a and e lengthen into á and é respectively before suffixes.

-t ‘acc.’  -ról-ról  -ban-ben  -nak-nék
‘about’  ‘in’  ‘for’
apa ‘father’  apát  apáról  apábban  apánek  etc.
alma ‘apple’  almát  almáról  almábann  almának  etc.
teve ‘camel’  tevé  tevérol  tevében  tevének  etc.
kefe ‘brush’  kefét  keféról  kefében  kefének  etc.

Note that there is no lengthening before some suffixes:

adjective forming -i  megyet ‘county’ (adj.)
-ként ‘as’  faként ‘as a tree’
-kor ‘at the time of’  távoztakor ‘at the time of his departure’
-ságiság ‘-ness’  katónaság ‘army’
-szerű ‘-like’  faszerű ‘treelike’
-szor-  -szer-  -szó ‘times’  lambdaszor ‘multiplied by lambda’

1.6 Word stress
Stress always falls on the first syllable of the word in isolation. Words may lose stress when incorporated into phrases and sentences.
2. Articles

2.1

The indefinite article is *egy*. The definite article is *a* or *az*. The variant *a* is used before consonant-initial words and *az* is used before vowel-initial ones: *a sas* ‘the eagle’, *az ajtó* ‘the door’.

In neutral (non-contrastive, non-emphatic sentences) the articles are not stressed.

The articles may not receive inflectional or derivational endings (thus they are not inflected for case, number, etc.).

*a sas* ‘the eagle’  
*a sasok* ‘the eagles’  
*a sasnak* ‘for the eagle’

*az ajtó* ‘the door’  
*az ajtók* ‘the doors’  
*az ajtónak* ‘for the door’

*egy hal* ‘a fish’  
*egy halnak* ‘for a fish’

2.2

The definite article is used before certain kinds of proper nouns, in particular, the names of mountain ranges (as *Alpok* ‘the Alps’), hills/mountains (*a János hegyl* ‘János hill’), rivers (as *Duna* ‘the Danube’), seas (as *Fekete Tenger* ‘the Black Sea’), lakes (as *Balaton* ‘Lake Balaton’), regions (as *Alföld* ‘the Great Hungarian Plain’), streets (as *Csepeli út* ‘Csepeli Street’), roads (as *Rákóczi út* ‘Rákóczi Road’), squares (as *Rákóczi tér* ‘Rákóczi Square’), countries consisting of more than one unhyphenated word (as *Amerikai Egyesült Államok* ‘the United States of America’), newspapers (as *Népszava*), books (as *Édes Anna*) and institutions (as *Magyar Tudományos Akadémia* ‘the Hungarian Academy of Sciences’).

No article is used before the names of continents (*Afrika* ‘Africa’), countries/states of one word or more than one unhyphenated word (as *Magyarország* ‘Hungary’, *Észak-Irország* ‘Northern Ireland’), counties (*Baranya*), cities/towns/villages (*Budapest*).

In colloquial/informal usage the definite article is often used before personal names (first names or surnames). This usage is sometimes penalised by purists.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>informal</td>
<td>formal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hol van a Kristóf?</td>
<td>Hol van Kristóf?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘Where is Christopher?’</td>
<td>‘Where is Christopher?’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beszéltem a Kováccsal.</td>
<td>Beszéltem Kovácsal.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I have talked to Kovács.’</td>
<td>‘I have talked to Kovács.’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Én még hallottam a Ruttkayt előadni. Én még hallottam Ruttkayt előadni.  
‘I was fortunate enough to hear Ruttkay lecture.’

Note that the colloquial use of the definite article before personal names implies a degree of familiarity/irreverence/informality. Thus  
Én még hallottam a Ruttkayt Shakespeare-ról előadni.  
‘I was fortunate enough to hear Ruttkay lecture on Shakespeare.’

is OK, but  

*Én! Én még hallottam a Ruttkayt a Shakespeare-ról előadni.*  
‘I was fortunate enough to hear Ruttkay lecture on Shakespeare.’

is unlikely to occur.

2.3

Usually no article is used before nouns or noun phrases functioning as subject complements:

|János rendőr|Einstein fizikus volt|
|‘John is a policeman.’|‘Einstein was a physicist.’|
|A kobra hüllő|Ez a ház palota lesz|
|‘The cobra is a reptile.’|‘This house will be a palace.’

In colloquial usage the indefinite article is used before singular nouns or noun phrases functioning as subject complements. This usage is sometimes penalised by purists.

|János egy rendőr|Einstein egy fizikus volt|
|‘John is a policeman.’|‘Einstein was a physicist.’|
|A kobra egy hüllő|Ez a ház egy palota lesz|
|‘The cobra is a reptile.’|‘This house will be a palace.’|
2.4
Note that (unlike in English) the definite article is used with uncountable nouns and plural countable nouns even if the expression has generic reference:

*a sőr
A sőr veszélyes lehet.
*a lányok
A lányokhoz vonzódott.

may mean ‘beer in general’
‘Beer may be dangerous.’

may mean ‘girls in general’
‘He/she/it was attracted to girls.’

3. Nouns

3.1 Structure
The noun in Hungarian consists of the stem plus five inflectional slots, i.e. positions where inflectional suffixes can occur. The first slot indicates NUMBER, the second slot indicates POSSESSIVE/PERSON, the third slot indicates NOMINAL POSSESSIVE, the fourth slot indicates NOMINAL POSSESSIVE NUMBER and the fifth slot indicates CASE. Each of these slots may be empty as the unmarked status of these categories (singular, non-possessive, non-possessor, singular possessed, nominative) is always a null suffix. The NOMINAL POSSESSIVE NUMBER can only be plural if the NOMINAL POSSESSIVE slot is filled.

Thus, schematically the structure of the noun is:

| Stem + NUMBER + POSSESSIVE + (NOMINAL POSSESSIVE + NOMINAL POSSESSIVE NUMBER) + CASE |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Examples: | 0 | I | II | III | IV | V | Gloss |
| barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘friend’ |
| barádot | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘friend ACC’ |
| barátok | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘friends’ |
| barátom | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘my friend’ |
| baráté | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘that of a friend’ |
| barátomat | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘my friend ACC’ |
| barátomé | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘that of my friend’ |
| barátomét | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘that of my friend ACC’ |
| barátoméit | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘those of my friend’ |
| barátainéit | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | barát | ‘those of my friends’ |

Note that the first form above (the uninflected singular stem in nominal case) is the usual ‘dictionary form’ for nouns in Hungarian.

Note that grammatical gender does not exist in Hungarian.
3.2 Number

The singular is unmarked in Hungarian.

3.2.1

The plural is a harmonising three-form suffix -ök/-ek/-ök where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony (See Section 1.4):

lányok 'girls'  emberek 'people'  tökök 'pumpkins'
csokok 'kisses'  rétek 'meadows'  sünök 'hedgehogs'

The suffix vowel is aie instead of the regular oelő after Lowering Stems (see Section 4.1), a appears after back-vowel stems and e appears after all front-vowel stems (including the ones that have a rounded vowel in the stem-final syllable).

falak 'walls'  szögek 'nails'
fogak 'teeth'  fülék 'ears'

The suffix vowel is unstable: it does not appear if the stem ends in a vowel. Thus, the plural is -k after vowel-final stems:

hollók 'ravens'  kocskák 'carts'  vésők 'chisels'

3.2.2

The plural is the suffix -ül/-jel/-iel/-el-ei (instead of -ök/-ek/-ök/-k) if the noun is marked for POSSESSIVE/PERSON:

hollóim 'my ravens'  kalapjaim 'my hats'  lányaím 'my daughters'  vésőim 'my chisels'  keretjém 'my gardens'  szemeim 'my eyes'

For the choice between the variants see Section 3.3 on POSSESSIVE/PERSON suffixes.

3.3 Possessive/Person

The noun referring to the thing possessed is marked with the POSSESSIVE/PERSON suffix: (botom 'my stick', botunk 'our stick', etc.).

3.3.1

The suffixes expressing the possessor of singular possessed nouns are the following:

Singular possessed

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>sg</th>
<th>-oml-eml-öm</th>
<th>-m</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>-odl-edl-öd</td>
<td>-d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>-ja-je-je</td>
<td>-al-e</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1pl -unkl-ünk  -nk

2pl -otokl-otekl-ölök  -tokl-tekl-tök

3pl -jukl-jük  -ulkl-ulk

These suffixes are harmonising two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony (See Section 1.4).

bot 'stick'  kés 'knife'  kör 'circle'

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>sg</th>
<th>botom</th>
<th>késem</th>
<th>köröm</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>botod</td>
<td>késed</td>
<td>köröd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>botja</td>
<td>kése</td>
<td>köré</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1pl botunk  késünk  körünk

2pl bototak  késetak  körütök

3pl botjuk  késük  körük

The initial vowel in the 1st and 2nd person suffixes is unstable and does not appear after vowel-final stems.

hajó 'ship'

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>sg</th>
<th>hajóm</th>
<th>Erzsí 'Beth'</th>
<th>kesztyű 'glove'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>hajód</td>
<td>Erzsíd</td>
<td>kesztyád</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>hajója</td>
<td>Erzsíje</td>
<td>kesztyáje</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1pl hajónk  Erzsínk  kesztyünk

2pl hajótak  Erzsítek  kesztyőtök

3pl hajójuk  Erzsíjük  kesztyájuk

The initial suffix vowel is aie instead of the regular oelő in the 2nd person (singular and plural) and the 1st person singular after Lowering Stems (see Section 4.1). a appears after back-vowel stems and e appears after all front-vowel stems (including the ones that have a rounded vowel in the stem-final syllable).

fog 'tooth'

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>sg</th>
<th>fogam</th>
<th>füle</th>
<th>fog 'tooth'</th>
<th>füle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>fogad</td>
<td>füled</td>
<td>2pl fogotak  fületek</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>foga</td>
<td>füle</td>
<td>3pl foguk  füük</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

fül 'ear'

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>sg</th>
<th>fülem</th>
<th>1pl füle</th>
<th>fü 'ear'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2pl</td>
<td>fogunk</td>
<td>füle</td>
<td>3pl</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The choice between the j-less and the j-initial variants in the 3rd person (singular and plural) is determined partly by the last sound of the stem and partly by the class the stem belongs to:

Vowel-final stems take j-initial variants (e.g. hajója 'his/her/its ship').

Consonant-final stems take j-less variants if the final consonant is sz, sz, s, s, t, g, gy, ny, n, y, s, z, s, t, k, c, cs, ty, gy, ny, j, ly, m, h (e.g. hegye 'his/her/its mountain', lánnya 'his/her/its daughter', szeme 'his/her/its eye', etc). Other consonant-final stems may (more or less unpredictably) take the j-initial variants (botja 'his/her/its stick', padja 'his/her/its bench', karja 'his/her/its arm', etc.) or the j-less one (széle 'his/her/its edge', vére 'his/her/its blood', etc.)

Alternating Stems and Lowering Stems usually take j-less variants (bokra 'his/her/its bush', hala 'his/her/its fish'; see Chapter 4 and Section 4.1).

Note that there are many irregularities (e.g. hune 'his/her/its sin', farmja 'his/her/its farm', reggele 'his/her/its morning', etc.)

3.3.2

The suffixes expressing the possessor of plural possessed nouns are the following:

**Plural possessed**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1sg</th>
<th>-i-jaíl-jei/-ail-ei + -m</th>
<th>1pl</th>
<th>-i-jaíl-jei/-ail-ei + -nk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>-i-jaíl-jei/-ail-ei + -d</td>
<td>2pl</td>
<td>-i-jaíl-jei/-ail-ei + -tok/-tek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>-i-jaíl-jei/-ail-ei + -o</td>
<td>3pl</td>
<td>-i-jaíl-jei/-ail-ei + -k</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The plural possessed suffixes consist of the plural marker and the POSSESSIVE/PERSON markers. The latter have just one form except in the 2nd person plural where it is the harmonizing two-form suffix -tok/ték. The choice between the variants is determined by Vowel Harmony (See Section 1.4):

botjaítok 'yourp sticks'
boráitok 'yourp knives'

késeitok 'yourp circles'

Note that there are no markers in the 3rd person singular.

The choice of the plural before the POSSESSIVE/PERSON marker is determined by several factors.

The non-harmonizing -i variant appears if the stem ends in a vowel which is not i:

<p>| | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hajó 'ship'</td>
<td>kesztya 'glove'</td>
<td>hajó 'ship'</td>
<td>kesztya 'glove'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1sg</td>
<td>hajóján</td>
<td>kesztyúánk</td>
<td>1pl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>hajóid</td>
<td>kesztyúid</td>
<td>2pl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>hajóí</td>
<td>kesztyúí</td>
<td>3pl</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

If the stem itself ends in an i, the suffix is always harmonizing -jáil-jei. The choice between -jáil-jei is determined by Vowel Harmony (See Section 1.4):

Erzsi ‘Beth’ kocsí ‘car’ Erzsi ‘Beth’ kocsí ‘car’

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1sg</td>
<td>Erzsijéim</td>
<td>kocsijáim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>Erzsijéid</td>
<td>kocsijáid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>Erzsijéi</td>
<td>kocsijái</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The choice between the j-less and j-initial variants of the suffix expressing plural possessed is determined by the same factors as in the case of the singular possessed 3rd person forms discussed above. If a form for singular possessed is j-less, it is j-less for plural possessed too – if it is j-initial for singular possessed, it is j-initial for plural possessed as well.

The choice between the variant in ai as opposed to a is determined by Vowel Harmony (See Section 1.4):

bot ‘stick’ kés ‘knife’ kór ‘circle’

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1sg</td>
<td>botjáim</td>
<td>kései</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>botjaíd</td>
<td>késeid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>botjai</td>
<td>kései</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that the j-initial suffix variants may cause assimilation which is unindicated in the spelling (e.g. padja [pajj]). For the actual pronunciation of the consonant clusters consisting of a consonant+j see Section 1.3.4 on Palatalization.

3.4 Nominal possessive

The NOMINAL POSSESSIVE is used when the possessor noun occurs alone standing for the whole possessive construction (noun phrase). The nominal possessive suffix is non-harmonic -é:
3. Nouns

Compare:

Az a kutyá a lányomé.
That dog is my daughter’s.

Az a könyv a tanáré.
That book is the teacher’s.

boté ‘that of the stick’
boré ‘that of the wine’
hajóé ‘that of the ship’

Az a kutyá a lányom kutyája.
That dog is my daughter’s dog.

Az a könyv a tanár könyve.
That book is the teacher’s book.

késé ‘that of the knife’
köré ‘that of the circle’
kocsíé ‘that of the car’

See Section 23.1 on the Possessive Construction.

3.5 Nominal possessive number

The plural marker of the NOMINAL POSSESSIVE NUMBER is the non-harmonic suffix -é which only appears together with the NOMINAL POSSESSIVE mark -é and expresses that there is more than one thing possessed by the referent of the noun:

Azok a kutyák a lányoméi.
Those dogs are my daughter’s.

Azok a könyvek a tanáréi.
Those books are the teacher’s.

botéi ‘those of the stick’
boréi ‘those of the wine’
hajóéi ‘those of the ship’

Azok a kutyák a lányom kutyái.
Those dogs are my daughter’s dogs.

Azok a könyvek a tanár könyvei.
Those books are the teacher’s books.

késéi ‘those of the knife’
köréi ‘those of the circle’
kocsíéi ‘those of the car’

3.6 Case

In Hungarian a lot of the prepositional meanings found in English are expressed by cases. The case suffixes and case-like endings are the following (approximately equivalent English prepositions are given when possible):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form(s)</th>
<th>Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>φ</td>
<td>NOMINATIVE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-oti- eti-öt-t</td>
<td>ACCUSATIVE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-naki-nek</td>
<td>DATIVE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-val/vel</td>
<td>INSTRUMENTAL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ért</td>
<td>CAUSAL-FINAL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-vál/vé</td>
<td>TRANSLATIVE</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

C

-ban/-ben
-ön/-en/-ön/-n
-nál-nél

INESSIVE
SUPERESSIVE
ADESSIVE

D

-ból-ból
-ról-ról
-rai-re
-tól-tól

ILLATIVE
ELATIVE
DELATIVE
SUBLATIVE

E

-kor
-ontal- entel- öntel-

TEMPORAL
DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL

F

-onként/-enként/
-óstulul- estiül-

ASSOCIATIVE
FORMALIS

-a/ál/aj

ESSIVE

3.6.1 Functions

The cases in group A are syntactic cases, i.e. their use is determined by the function of the word in the sentence/construction. The subject in a Hungarian sentence is in the NOMINATIVE (Miklós ajándékat adott Kristófnak. Nicholas gave Christopher a present.), the direct object in the ACCUSATIVE (Miklós ajándékat adott Kristófnak. Nicholas gave Christopher a present.), and the indirect object is usually in the DATIVE (Miklós ajándékat adott Kristófnak. Nicholas gave Christopher a present.). Some verbs and complex verbs in infinitival constructions take a DATIVE subject (Kristófnak kell rájónnie. ‘Christopher must find out.’). The case of the possessive construction (Kristófnak az ajándéka ‘Christopher’s present’, see Section 23.1). Note that the DATIVE has non-syntactic uses as well, e.g. Nekidőlt a falnak. ‘He leaned against the wall.’

The cases in group B express ‘instrumental’ (INSTRUMENTAL, e.g. Baltával vága a fát. ‘He cut wood with an axe’), ‘purpose’ (CAUSAL-FINAL, e.g. A szabadássért harcoltak. ‘They fought for freedom.’) and ‘result’ (TRANSITIVE, e.g. Pillangóval váltott. ‘She turned into a butterfly.’).
3. Nouns

The cases in group C relate to place. For example, A szobában olvas. ‘(S)he is reading in the room.’ (INESSIVE).

The cases in group D express direction. Some of them can be used in both spatial and temporal senses, e.g. Elsétált a háziz. ‘He walked up to the house.’ Nyelvünk dolgozunk. ‘We work until eight.’ (TERMINATIVE).

The cases in group E have to do with time. For example, Találkozunk nyolckor. ‘Let’s meet at eight!’ (TEMPORAL); Naponta találkozunk. ‘We met every day/daily.’ (DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL).

The cases in group F are a mixed bag. The DISTRIBUTIVE is like the DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL, but it can be used non-temporally (Könyvenként adom el a könyvtáramat. ‘I am selling my library by the book.’). Other examples: Kutyástul beugrott a tóba. ‘(S)he/it jumped into the lake together with her/his dog.’ Emberként nem fogadhatom el az egyenlőtlenséget. ‘As a human being I cannot accept inequality.’ Emberül viselkedett. ‘(S)he behaved as a human being’.

In addition to these uses, verbs/nouns/adjectives often require that their dependent noun(s) appear in a certain case (‘government’). The required cases are (more-or-less) unpredictable and must be learnt separately for each verb/noun/adjective. For example, vágyik N+SUBLATIVE ‘long for N’; Békére vágyik. ‘(S)he/it longs for peace’; alkalmazkodik N+ALLATIVE ‘adapt to N’; Alkalmazkodik a meleg időjáráshoz. ‘We adapted to the hot weather”; szerelmes N+ILLATIVE ‘in love with N’ Szerelmes Amanda. ‘(S)he/it is in love with Amanda’.

3.6.2 Forms

Some of the case suffixes are harmonizing three-form suffixes (like -hoz/ -hez-t-hoz) or two-form suffixes (like -nak-nek), others are non-harmonic (like -kor). The choice between the variants of the harmonic suffixes is determined by Vowel Harmony (See Section 1.4):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>NOMINATIVE</th>
<th>dob</th>
<th>szem</th>
<th>köd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ACCUSATIVE</td>
<td>dobt</td>
<td>szemet</td>
<td>ködít</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DATIVE</td>
<td>dobnak</td>
<td>szemnek</td>
<td>ködnek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INSTRUMENTAL</td>
<td>dobbal</td>
<td>szennel</td>
<td>köddel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAUSAL-FINAL</td>
<td>dobért</td>
<td>szemért</td>
<td>ködért</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TRANSLATIVE</td>
<td>dobá</td>
<td>szemné</td>
<td>köddé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INESSIVE</td>
<td>dobban</td>
<td>szemen</td>
<td>ködben</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUPERESSIVE</td>
<td>doban</td>
<td>szemen</td>
<td>ködön</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADESSIVE</td>
<td>dobán</td>
<td>szennél</td>
<td>ködnél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ILLATIVE</td>
<td>dobbah</td>
<td>szembe</td>
<td>ködbe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ELATIVE</td>
<td>dobból</td>
<td>szemből</td>
<td>ködből</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DELATIVE</td>
<td>dobról</td>
<td>szemról</td>
<td>ködről</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUBLATIVE</td>
<td>dobra</td>
<td>szemre</td>
<td>ködře</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ABLATIVE</td>
<td>dobtól</td>
<td>szemtól</td>
<td>ködől</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ALLATIVE</td>
<td>dobhot</td>
<td>szemhez</td>
<td>ködhöz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TERMINATIVE</td>
<td>dobig</td>
<td>semig</td>
<td>ködig</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DISTRIBUTIVE</td>
<td>dobonként</td>
<td>szeménként</td>
<td>ködömként</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ASSOCIATIVE</td>
<td>dobol</td>
<td>szemenstul</td>
<td>ködöstäul</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FORMALIS</td>
<td>dobbent</td>
<td>szemkent</td>
<td>ködkent</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3.6.2.1 Temporal and Distributive-Temporal

The TEMPORAL and the DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL suffixes behave as normal harmonic suffixes, but only combine with temporal expressions (naponta, ‘every day’, hetente, ‘every week’, csütörtöken, ‘every Thursday’).

3.6.2.2 Accusative

The initial vowel of the ACCUSATIVE -ot/-et/-ót is unstable.

(i) It does not appear (and thus we get the -t variant)

a. if the stem ends in a vowel

hajót ‘ship+ACC’ kocsit ‘car+ACC’ készít ‘glove+ACC’

b. if the stem ends in a vowel followed by the consonants sz, z, s, zs, j, l, r, n, ny, szz, zz, ss, ll, rr, nn, nny, ns, nz, nz:

rész ‘part+ACC’  
üzöm ‘vapour+ACC’  
kész ‘knife+ACC’  
garázst ‘garage+ACC’  
sóhajt ‘sigh+ACC’  
súlyt ‘weight+ACC’  
dalt ‘song+ACC’  
bort ‘wine+ACC’  
színt ‘colour+ACC’  
lányt ‘girl+ACC’  
protestánszt ‘protestant+ACC’  
reneszánszt ‘renaissance+ACC’  
pénzt ‘money+ACC’
(ii) The unstable vowel appears:

a. when the stem ends in a consonant or consonant cluster other than the ones listed above:

   
   dobó ‘drum+ACC’ szemet ‘eye+ACC’ ködöt ‘fog+ACC’

b. if the stem is a Lowering Stem, in which case the unstable vowel is irregularly a/e (see Section 4.1 on noun stems). The choice of a vs. e is determined by Vowel Harmony (See Section 1.4):

   
   hasát ‘stomach+ACC’ tehenet ‘cow+ACC’ fiület ‘ear+ACC’
   várat ‘castle+ACC’ vizet ‘water+ACC’ kőmnyet ‘tear+ACC’

\* Note that the accusative of Lowering Stems does have a vowel even when the stem happens to end in a consonant after which there is no vowel in regular stems.

   
   hasát ‘stomach+ACC’ tehenet ‘cow+ACC’ fiület ‘ear+ACC’
   várat ‘castle+ACC’ vizet ‘water+ACC’ kőmnyet ‘tear+ACC’

\* Note that the unstable vowel appears in the accusative of Vowel-deleting Stems even when they happen to end in a consonant after which there is no vowel in a regular stem. (See Section 4.2):

ökol ‘fist’ öklöt ‘fist+ACC’
okör ‘ox’ öklöt ‘ox+ACC’

3.6.2.3 Superessive, Associative, Distributive-Temporal, Distributive

The initial vowel of the SUPERESSIVE (-onl/-enl/-ön), the ASSOCIATIVE (-ostul/-estul/-östul) the DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL (-ontul/-entul/-önchte) and the DISTRIBUTIVE (-önkén/t-önként/-önként/-önként) is unstable: it does not appear after stems ending in a vowel:

   
   SUPERESSIVE   ASSOCIATIVE   DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL   DISTRIBUTIVE

hajón ‘on (a) ship’ hajóslul ‘together with (a) ship’ hajónként ‘for every ship’

kocsin ‘on (a) car’ kocsisul ‘together with (a) car’ kocsként ‘for every car’
tevén ‘on (a) camel’ tevénként ‘for every camel’

After Lowering Stems (See Chapter 4 on noun stems) the initial vowel of the the ASSOCIATIVE, the DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL, the DISTRIBUTIVE, but not the SUPERESSIVE is -ale instead of the regular -ol/lö:

\* Note not all v-initial suffixes behave in this way. There are non-alternating v-initial suffixes as well (such as -van ‘-ty’: harvan ‘sixty’, deverbal noun-forming -vány/vény: latvány ‘sight’, deverbal adverb-forming -val/ve: lopva ‘stealthily’), which are v-initial after vowel-final stems, but whose initial v remains unchanged even after consonant-final stems.

3.6.2.4 Instrumental, Translative

The INSTRUMENTAL (-vall-vel) and the TRANSLATIVE (-váli-vé) are only v-initial after stems that end with a vowel:

   
   INSTRUMENTAL      TRANSLATIVE

hajóval ‘with (a) ship’ hajóvá ‘(turn) into a ship’
kokszival ‘with (a) car’ kocsivá ‘(turn) into a car’
kesztyüvel ‘with (a) glove’ kesztyűvé ‘(turn) into a glove’

Otherwise, when the stem ends with a consonant, the initial v of -vall-vel, -váli-vé becomes identical with the stem-final consonant:

   
   INSTRUMENTAL      TRANSLATIVE

doból ‘with (a) drum’ dobá ‘(turn) into a drum’
szemmel ‘with (a) eye’ szemmó ‘(turn) into an eye’
tökkel ‘with (a) pumpkin’ tökké ‘(turn) into a pumpkin’
4. Noun stems

Hungarian stems typically do not change when suffixes are added to them. Regular exceptions to this generalisation result from the sound rules discussed in Chapter 1: Regressive Voice Assimilation (Section 1.3.1), Degemination (Section 1.3.2), Affrication (Section 1.3.3), Palatalization (Section 1.3.4), Nasal Place Assimilation (Section 1.3.5), and Final a, e Lengthening (Section 1.5). These are regular in the sense that they automatically and exceptionlessly apply to the last sound of every stem that comes under the purview of any of these rules. Regressive Voice Assimilation, Degemination, Affrication, Palatalization and Nasal Place Assimilation are not indicated by the spelling, but Final a, e Lengthening is.

There are, however, some irregular stem types, which do change when suffixes are added to them or cause unpredictable changes in the suffixes. The nominal ones are the following:

4.1 Lowering Stems

Lowering Stems do not change themselves, but cause some irregularities in the choice of the suffix variants. After these stems

(i) the suffix-initial unstable vowel is -a instead of the regular -ő/ő (not in the Supersessive!), and

(ii) the unstable vowel of the accusative is retained even after stem-final consonants that otherwise cause the deletion of the unstable vowels.

Compare

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>REGULAR STEM</th>
<th>LOWERING STEM</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>dalak 'song+PL'</td>
<td>falak 'wall+PL'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kételyek 'doubt+PL'</td>
<td>helyek 'place+PL'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tejfölöm 'sour cream+POSS/PERS:1sg'</td>
<td>ölem 'lap+POSS/PERS:1sg'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dalt 'song+ACC'</td>
<td>falat 'wall+ACC'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kételyt 'doubt+ACC'</td>
<td>helyet 'place+ACC'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tejfölt 'sour cream+POSS/PERS:1sg'</td>
<td>ölet 'lap+ACC'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The following is a list of some common nominal Lowering Stems:

agárl 'greyhound' hál 'bridge' rúdl 'pole'
ág 'branch' hold 'moon' sár 'mud'
agy 'brain' hó 'snow' sugár 'ray'
ágy 'bed' högly 'lady' szamár 'donkey'
árv 'price' in 'tendon' szakáll 'beard'
árny 'shadow' kanál 'spoon' szá 'mouth'
bogárl 'beetle' kéz 'hand' szárny 'wing'
bájl 'charm' kosár 'basket' stél 'wind'
béll 'bowels' könny 'tear' sér 'coal'
csíkl 'stripe' könnyv 'book' szó 'word'
csől 'pipe' kő 'stone' szög 'nail'
csönd 'silence' kút 'well' szörny 'monster'
darál 'wasp' láb 'leg' száz 'virgin'
darul 'crane' levé 'leaf' tál 'dish'
dél 'noon' ló 'horse' talp 'sole'
ér 'vein' lúd 'goose' tárgy 'object'
esz 'mind' lyuk 'hole' társ 'partner'
fal 'wall' madár 'bird' tehén 'cow'
falul 'village' máj 'liver' tej 'milk'
feg 'head' mell 'breast' tető 'louse'
fejl 'half' méz 'honey' tél 'winter'
férj 'husband' mézs 'lime' tér 'square'
fonál 'thread' mocsár 'marsh' tő 'lake'
fog 'tooth' mú 'work of art' toll 'feather'
föld 'earth, ground' nyak 'neck' tő 'stem'
fül 'ear' nyár 'summer' tógy 'udder'
fű 'grass' nyél 'handle' tölgy 'oak'
gally 'twin' nyíl 'arrow' törzs 'tribe'
gyárl 'factory' nyil 'rabbit' tüsz 'fire'
hajl 'hair' oldal 'side' úr 'gentleman'
hal 'fish' ól 'lap' út 'road'
has 'stomach' óv 'belt' úgy 'affair'
ház 'house' paráz 'ash' üruggy 'pretex'
héjl 'pencil' pohár 'glass, cup' újj 'finger'
helyl 'place' réz 'copper' vágy 'desire'
4. Noun stems

vár  ‘castle’  vall  ‘shoulder’  viz  ‘water’
vaj  ‘butter’  vaszon  ‘linen’  volgy  ‘valley’

Although it is unpredictable which nominal stem is a Lowering Stem, some irregular noun classes are always lowering as well. All nominal v-stems and Vowel-shortening Stems are Lowering Stems (See Sections 4.3 and 4.4).

4.1.1 Lowering suffixes

Not only stems, but suffixes may be lowering too. For example, the PLURAL and the POSSESSIVE/PERSON suffixes lower:

barátokat  ‘stick+PLURAL+ACC’  compare  barátot  ‘stick+ACC’
barátomat  ‘stick+POSS/PERS:1SG+ACC’

The noun-forming -ság/-ség ‘-ship, -ness’ does not:

barásságot  ‘friend+ship+ACC’  compare  barátot  ‘stick+ACC’

Inflectional suffixes are lowering, derivational suffixes are non-lowering (unless they are adjective-forming [See Chapter 22 on derivational suffixes])

Some stems are subject to changes depending on the shape of the suffix (alternating stems). The nominal ones are the following:

4.2 Vowel-deleting Stems

These stems all end in a vowel followed by a single consonant. The vowel preceding the stem-final consonant is regularly o(e)/ő (there are four exceptional nominal stems: vacak ‘worthless thing’, karaz ‘haystack’, aják ‘lip’, bajusz ‘moustache’).

In Vowel-deleting Stems the vowel preceding the stem-final consonant deletes if the suffix attached to the stem begins with a vowel. Suffixes with initial unstable vowels keep their suffix-initial vowels and behave like vowel-initial suffixes:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C-initial suffix</th>
<th>V-initial suffix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bokor  ‘bush’</td>
<td>bokorban  ‘ia (a) bush’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eper  ‘strawberry’</td>
<td>eperben  ‘in (a) strawberry’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>okör  ‘ox’</td>
<td>okörbén  ‘in (an) ox’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

TERMINATIVE -ig, CAUSAL-FINAL -ért, and NOMINAL POSSESSIVE -é are exceptional because they begin with a vowel, but do not cause vowel deletion in Vowel-deleting Stems:

bokor  ‘bush’    | bokorig  ‘bush-ig’ | bokorért  ‘bush-ért’ | bokoré  ‘bush-é’
eper  ‘strawberry’  | eperig  ‘strawberry-ig’  | eperért  ‘strawberry-ért’  | eperé  ‘strawberry-é’
okör  ‘ox’       | okörig  ‘ox-ig’       | okörért  ‘ox-ért’       | oköré  ‘ox-é’

* Note that in the ACCUSATIVE the unstable vowel of the accusative suffix appears after Vowel-deleting Stems even when they happen to end in a consonant after which there is no vowel in the ACCUSATIVE in a regular stem. (See Section 3.6.2.2).

ököl  ‘fist’       | öklét  ‘fist-ig’       |
ökről  ‘ox’        | ökőrlét  ‘ox-ig’       |
hasznon  ‘profit’  | hasznot  ‘profit-ig’  |
tornyón  ‘tower’    | tornyót  ‘tower-ig’    |
bagolyon  ‘owl’    | bagloyót  ‘owl-ig’    |
bajuszson  ‘moustache’  | bajszot  ‘moustache-ig’  |

* Some nominal Vowel-deleting Stems are Lowering Stems as well.

The following is a list of some common nominal Vowel-deleting Stems (the underlined ones are Lowering Stems):

ajak  ‘lip’       | farok  ‘tail’
adom  ‘dream’    | fájdalom  ‘pain’
árok  ‘trench’    | fátyol  ‘veil’
atok  ‘curse’     | félelem  ‘fear’
bagoly  ‘owl’     | fészek  ‘nest’
bajusz  ‘moustache’  | figyelem  ‘attention’|
bátor  ‘brave’    | fogalom  ‘notion’
birodalom  ‘empire’  | forgalom  ‘traffic’
bokor  ‘bush’     | forradalom  ‘revolution’
csokor  ‘bunch of flowers’  | fogoly  ‘prisoner’
cukor  ‘sugar’    | gődör  ‘pohole’
dolog  ‘thing’    | gyomor  ‘stomach’
eper  ‘strawberry’  | gyötrelem  ‘suffering’
ezer  ‘thousand’  | győzlem  ‘victory’
érmem  ‘medal’    | hasznon  ‘profit’
értelmem  ‘sense’ | hatalom  ‘power’
érzelem  ‘emotion’ | három  ‘three’
4. Noun stems

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hungarian Stem</th>
<th>English Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>iker</td>
<td>'twin'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>irodalom</td>
<td>'literature'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>izgalom</td>
<td>'excitement'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>izom</td>
<td>'muscle'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jutalom</td>
<td>'reward'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kapocs</td>
<td>'clasp'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kereskedelem</td>
<td>'commerce'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kényelem</td>
<td>'comfort'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kóreg</td>
<td>'bark of a tree'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>korom</td>
<td>'sout'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kőlyök</td>
<td>'kid'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kőröm</td>
<td>'nail'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>malom</td>
<td>'mill'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>marok</td>
<td>'grip'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meder</td>
<td>'riverbed'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>majom</td>
<td>'monkey'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>méreg</td>
<td>'poison'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>öböl</td>
<td>'bay'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ökol</td>
<td>'fist'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ökör</td>
<td>'ox'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ólom</td>
<td>'lead'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>píszok</td>
<td>'filth'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pokol</td>
<td>'hell'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sark</td>
<td>'corner'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sátor</td>
<td>'tent'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>selyem</td>
<td>'silk'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szatyor</td>
<td>'bag'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szerelem</td>
<td>'love'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szírom</td>
<td>'petal'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szobor</td>
<td>'sculpture'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>társadalom</td>
<td>'society'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>telek</td>
<td>'land'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>terem</td>
<td>'hall'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>titok</td>
<td>'secret'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>torok</td>
<td>'throat'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>torony</td>
<td>'tower'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>történelem</td>
<td>'history'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tücsök</td>
<td>'cricket'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tükör</td>
<td>'mirror'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>turelem</td>
<td>'patience'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vakac</td>
<td>'worthless thing'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vászon</td>
<td>'linen'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>veszedelem</td>
<td>'danger'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vődör</td>
<td>'bucket'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that all Hungarian nouns ending in -alom or -elem are Vowel-deleting Stems.

Note that vowel-deleting nouns ending in -alom are all Lowering Stems. (Nouns ending in -elem are also Lowering Stems, but this in undetectable in Standard Hungarian [the dialect described in this book]).

Note that in three words pehely 'fluff', kehely 'chalice' and teher 'weight', not only is there a vowel loss, but the consonants flanking the unstable stem vowel change places when the vowel is deleted:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C-initial suffix</th>
<th>V-initial suffix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>teher</td>
<td>teherben</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kehely</td>
<td>kehelyben</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pehely</td>
<td>pehelyben</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'weight'</td>
<td>'in (a) weight'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'chalice'</td>
<td>'in (a) chalice'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'fluff'</td>
<td>'in (a) fluff'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>terhek</td>
<td>'weights'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kelyhek</td>
<td>'chalices'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pelyhek</td>
<td>'fluffs'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

4.3 v-stems

There are a small number of stems that end in a vowel in isolation and before a consonant-initial suffix, but end in the consonant v when followed by a vowel-initial suffix.

Terminative -ig, causal-final -ért, and nominal possessive -é do not trigger the changes to the stems described below, i.e. although they are vowel-initial, the shape of v-stems preceding them is the same as in isolation. (e.g. tőig 'faith in', tőé 'he').

Note that all nominal v-stems are also Lowering Stems (e.g. lovak 'horses', csővek 'pipes').

4.3.1 v-adding Stems

Lő 'horse', fit 'grass', nyú 'maggot', tő 'stem', cső 'pipe', kő 'stone', mú 'work of art', hő 'snow', szó 'word' and tő 'lake' add a final v before vowel-initial suffixes (suffixes with an unstable initial vowel count as vowel-initial suffixes).

4.3.1.1 Lő 'horse', fit 'grass', nyú 'maggot', tő 'stem', cső 'pipe', kő 'stone' shorten their vowels when they take a v before a vowel-initial suffix:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C-initial suffix</th>
<th>V-initial suffix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lö</td>
<td>lőban</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cső</td>
<td>csőben</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kő</td>
<td>kőben</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'horse'</td>
<td>'in (a) horse'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'pipe'</td>
<td>'in (a) pipe'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'stone'</td>
<td>'works of art'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that the vowel of mú 'work of art' is a v-adding Stem, but does not shorten: művek 'works of art'.

4.3.1.2 In the three stems hő 'snow', szó 'word' and tő 'lake' stem-final ó changes into av before a vowel-initial suffix:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C-initial suffix</th>
<th>V-initial suffix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hő</td>
<td>hőban</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szó</td>
<td>szóban</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tő</td>
<td>tőban</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'snow'</td>
<td>'in snow'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'word'</td>
<td>'in (a) word'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'lake'</td>
<td>'in (a) lake'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'snow+ACC'</td>
<td>'words'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'lake'</td>
<td>'lake'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that the Accusative of szó 'word' is szót.
4.3.2 Vowel-to-v Stems
In the three stems falu ‘village’, daru ‘crane\text{animal}’ and tető ‘louse’ the stem-final vowel changes into \textit{v} before a vowel-initial suffix:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C-initial suffix</th>
<th>V-initial suffix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>falu ‘village’</td>
<td>faluban ‘in (a) village’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>daru ‘crane’</td>
<td>daruban ‘in (a) crane’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tető ‘louse’</td>
<td>tetőben ‘in (a) louse’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textit{Note} that these stems can be used in a regular non-alternating way (e.g. faluk ‘villages’) and sometimes it is more usual to use them in a regular way (e.g. darut ‘crane+ACC’, tetőt ‘louse+ACC’).

4.4 Vowel Shortening Stems
Some stems shorten their last (or only) stem vowel when followed by vowel-initial suffixes:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C-initial suffix</th>
<th>V-initial suffix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>nyár ‘summer’</td>
<td>nyárban ‘in (a) summer’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kéz ‘hand’</td>
<td>kézben ‘in (a) hand’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>túz ‘fire’</td>
<td>tízben ‘in (a) fire’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textit{Terminative -ig, Causal-Final -ért, and Nominal Possessive -é} do not cause vowel shortening (e.g. nyárig, tízért, kézét, etc.), although they are vowel-initial.

\textit{Note} that the \textit{Superessive -on/en/-ön} does not cause vowel shortening in most cases (e.g. nyáron, tízért, kézet, etc.). It optionally can if the vowel is \textit{i} or \textit{ő} (tízön \textit{ty:zön/ty:zön}; vízen \textit{vi:zen/vi:zen} ‘on water’). \textit{Fű} ‘grass’ always shortens in the \textit{Superessive:} févön

\textit{Note} that all Vowel-Shortening Stems are Lowering Stems (e.g. nyarak ‘summers’, tízek ‘fires’). The following is a list of some common nominal Vowel-shortening Stems:

- agár ‘greyhound’
- bél ‘bowels’
- bogár ‘beetle’
- cső ‘pipe’
- darázs ‘wasp’
- dél ‘noon’
- dék ‘waist’
- egér ‘mouse’
- elég ‘enough’
- ér ‘vein’
- ész ‘mind’
- ég ‘sky’
- egér ‘mouse’
- elég ‘enough’
- ér ‘vein’
- ész ‘mind’
- fedél ‘lid’
- fél ‘half’
- fenék ‘buttocks’
- fonál ‘thread’
- fű ‘grass’
- gyököre ‘root’

\textit{Note} that télék ‘soul’ is the only Shortening Stem in which the shortening vowel is not in the last syllable of the stem: lelket ‘soul+ACC’ (it is also a Vowel-deleting Stem).

4.5 Unrounding Stems
There are a few stems with final \textit{ő} and \textit{ő} that change these vowels into \textit{e} and \textit{a} respectively when followed by certain\textit{Possessive/Person} suffixes, in particular the ones that may begin with \textit{i} or \textit{j} (i.e. all the Plural Possessed suffixes (see Section 3.3.2) and the Singular Possessed 3rd person suffixes (see Section 3.3.1)):

- erdő ‘forest’
- erdeje ‘her forest’
- erdejék ‘your forests’
- ajtó ‘door’
- ajtaja ‘his door’
- ajtaiok ‘your doors’

The commonest Unrounding Stems are the following:

- idő ‘time’
- esztendő ‘year’
- erdő ‘forest’
- erő ‘power’
- ajtó ‘door’
- tűdő ‘lung’
- tető ‘top’
- mező ‘field’
- zászló ‘flag’

However, these stems may behave in a regular way, i.e. the change is sometimes optional (e.g. erdője ‘her/his forest’).
4.6 Final Vowel-deleting Stems

There are three stems, borjú ‘calf’, varjú ‘crow’, and ifjú ‘youth’, that may delete their stem-final vowels in the same environment as the one in Section 4.5 and before the plural:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular Possessed</th>
<th>1sg</th>
<th>apám</th>
<th>anyám</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td></td>
<td>apád</td>
<td>anyád</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td></td>
<td>apa</td>
<td>anya</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Plural Possessed</th>
<th>1pl</th>
<th>apánk</th>
<th>anyánk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2pl</td>
<td></td>
<td>apátok</td>
<td>anyátok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3pl</td>
<td></td>
<td>aják</td>
<td>anyák</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

However, these stems may behave in a regular way, i.e. the change is sometimes optional (e.g. varjúja ‘her/his/her crow’, borjúk ‘calf’).

4.7 Miscellaneous irregular stems

fiú ‘son’ has irregular singular and plural possessed forms (it deletes the final vowel and is a back-harmonic Lowering Stem). Note that fiú ‘boyfriend’ is regular:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular Possessed</th>
<th>1sg</th>
<th>fiám</th>
<th>fiúm</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>fiád</td>
<td>fiúd</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>fiá</td>
<td>fiúja</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Plural Possessed</th>
<th>1pl</th>
<th>fiúnk</th>
<th>fiúnk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2pl</td>
<td>fiátok</td>
<td>fiútok</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3pl</td>
<td>fiúk</td>
<td>fiújuk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular Possessed</th>
<th>1sg</th>
<th>fiúm</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>fiúd</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>fiú</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Plural Possessed</th>
<th>1pl</th>
<th>fiúnk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2pl</td>
<td>fiátok</td>
<td>fiútok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3pl</td>
<td>fiúk</td>
<td>fiújuk</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Some of the singular and plural possessed forms of apa ‘father’ and anya ‘mother’ are irregular (in these forms the stem-final vowel is deleted and the appropriate suffix-variants attach to the consonant-final stem):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular Possessed</th>
<th>1sg</th>
<th>szám/szájam</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>szád/szájad</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>szája</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Plural Possessed</th>
<th>1pl</th>
<th>szánk/szájunk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2pl</td>
<td>szátok/szájatok</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3pl</td>
<td>szájuk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that for many speakers báty ‘elder brother’ and öcs ‘younger brother’ only have possessive forms.

Some of the singular and plural possessed forms of száj ‘mouth’ have irregular alternative variants (in which the stem-final j is deleted and the appropriate suffix-variants attach to the vowel-final stem):

száj ‘mouth’

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular Possessed</th>
<th>1sg</th>
<th>száj</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>szájad</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>szájat</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Plural Possessed</th>
<th>1pl</th>
<th>szájaink</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2pl</td>
<td>szájaitok</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3pl</td>
<td>szájaik</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The ACCUSATIVE and the PLURAL of bíró ‘judge’ are bírát (rare) and bírék respectively in addition to the regular forms bíró and bírók. The
4. Noun stems

Some of the prepositional meanings found in English are expressed in Hungarian by postpositions. In this respect postpositions are like case endings. However, they are not attached to the noun itself, but follow it as a separate word (as előadás után ‘after the performance’) and may even refer to more than one noun or a nominal group (as előadás és a vacsora után ‘after the performance and the dinner’). As their name suggests postpositions normally follow the noun or nominal group they refer to.

The most important postpositions are the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Postposition</th>
<th>Orientation</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Usage</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>előtt</td>
<td>STATE</td>
<td>‘in front of, before’</td>
<td>SPACE, TIME</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>élé</td>
<td>DIRECTION:→to</td>
<td>‘to+in front of’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elöl</td>
<td>DIRECTION:←from</td>
<td>‘from+in front of’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögött</td>
<td>STATE</td>
<td>‘behind’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögé</td>
<td>DIRECTION:→to</td>
<td>‘to+behind’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögüül</td>
<td>DIRECTION:←from</td>
<td>‘from+behind’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alatt</td>
<td>STATE</td>
<td>‘under, below, during’</td>
<td>SPACE, TIME</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alá</td>
<td>DIRECTION:→to</td>
<td>‘to+below’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alöl</td>
<td>DIRECTION:←from</td>
<td>‘from+below’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>følöttifelett</td>
<td>STATE</td>
<td>‘above, over’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölé</td>
<td>DIRECTION:→to</td>
<td>‘to+above’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölül</td>
<td>DIRECTION:←from</td>
<td>‘above’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellett</td>
<td>STATE</td>
<td>‘next to’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellé</td>
<td>DIRECTION:→to</td>
<td>‘to+next to’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellöl</td>
<td>DIRECTION:←from</td>
<td>‘from+next to’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>köszött</td>
<td>STATE</td>
<td>‘between, among’</td>
<td>SPACE, TIME</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>köszé</td>
<td>DIRECTION:→to</td>
<td>‘to+between/among’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>köszül</td>
<td>DIRECTION:←from</td>
<td>‘from+between/among’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felé</td>
<td>DIRECTION:→to</td>
<td>‘towards’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>feldöl</td>
<td>DIRECTION:←from</td>
<td>‘from the direction of’</td>
<td>SPACE</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The PLURAL of férfi ‘man, male’ is férfiak.
### Proclausal intransitive proclitics

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Proclitics</th>
<th>Nominalization</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>előtt</td>
<td>előtt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elő</td>
<td>elő</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elől</td>
<td>elől</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögött</td>
<td>mögött</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögén</td>
<td>mögén</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögül</td>
<td>mögül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alatt</td>
<td>alatt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ál</td>
<td>ál</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>álom</td>
<td>álom</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölött</td>
<td>fölött</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felett</td>
<td>felett</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>föl</td>
<td>föl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölől</td>
<td>fölől</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellett</td>
<td>mellett</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellé</td>
<td>mellé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellől</td>
<td>mellől</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>között</td>
<td>között</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>közé</td>
<td>közé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>közül</td>
<td>közül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felé</td>
<td>felé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felől</td>
<td>felől</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kívül</td>
<td>kívül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>helyett</td>
<td>helyett</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>miatt</td>
<td>miatt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nélkül</td>
<td>nélkül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szerint</td>
<td>szerint</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>el</td>
<td>el</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elé</td>
<td>elé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögő</td>
<td>mögő</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögénk</td>
<td>mögénk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mögüllek</td>
<td>mögüllek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alánk</td>
<td>alánk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alánk</td>
<td>alánk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alában</td>
<td>alában</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölött</td>
<td>fölött</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölött</td>
<td>fölött</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellett</td>
<td>mellett</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mellé</td>
<td>mellé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>köztük</td>
<td>köztük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>közzé</td>
<td>közzé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>közzelük</td>
<td>közzelük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felé</td>
<td>felé</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fölött</td>
<td>fölött</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kívül</td>
<td>kívül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>helyett</td>
<td>helyett</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>miatt</td>
<td>miatt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nélkül</td>
<td>nélkül</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>szerint</td>
<td>szerint</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Meanings

- ** előtt**: in front of, before
- ** elő**: in front of (only with animate noun)
- ** elől**: in front of (only with inanimate noun)
- ** mögött**: behind
- ** mögén**: behind
- ** mögül**: behind
- ** alatt**: under
- ** ál**: under
- ** álom**: under
- ** fölött**: above
- ** felett**: above
- ** föl**: above
- ** fölől**: above
- ** mellett**: near
- ** mellé**: near
- ** mellől**: near
- ** között**: among
- ** közzé**: among
- ** közzelük**: among
- ** felé**: towards
- ** fölött**: towards
- ** kívül**: outside
- ** helyett**: instead of
- ** miatt**: because
- ** nélkül**: without
- ** szerint**: in a certain way

Note: The meanings above are general and context-dependent, requiring additional information to be fully understood.
6. Pronouns

6.1 Demonstrative pronouns
The commonest demonstrative pronouns are the following:

a) basic set

| ez     | ‘this’  |
| ezek   | ‘these’ |
| ugyanéz | ‘the same’ |
| ugyanézek | ‘the same+PL’ |
| az     | ‘that’  |
| azok   | ‘those’ |
| ugyanaz | ‘the same’ |
| ugyanazok | ‘the same+PL’ |

b) extended set

| ilyen | ‘such’  |
| ilyenek | ‘such+PL’ |
| ugyanilyen | ‘same as this’ |
| ugyanilyenek | ‘same as that+PL’ |
| effélé | ‘this kind’ |
| effélék | ‘these kinds’ |
| ekkora | ‘this size’ |
| ekkorák | ‘this size+PL’ |
| ugyanekkoráka | ‘this same size’ |
| ugyanekkorák | ‘this same size+PL’ |
| ennyi | ‘this much’ |
| ugyanennyi | ‘this same amount’ |

Note that ennyi ‘this much’, annyi ‘that much’, ugyanennyi ‘this same amount’, ugyanannyi ‘that same amount’ do not have plural forms.

They may be used attributively to qualify a noun in which case the demonstrative pronouns of the basic set are always followed by the definite article al/az:

Ez a kuty a fekete. ‘This dog is black.’
Azok a fekete kutyák nem ugatnak. ‘Those black dogs do not bark.’
Ekkora kutyát kaptam. ‘I got this big a dog.’

They may be used non-attributively (pronominally):

Ez egy fekete kuty. ‘This is a black dog.’
Péter nem olyan mint azok. ‘Peter is not like those.’
Látom ezeket. ‘I can see them.’
Ennyit kaptam. ‘I got this much.’

Demonstrative pronouns can take case endings like nouns. The special feature of the demonstrative pronouns of the basic set is that the final z of ez, az completely assimilates to the initial consonant of the attached case endings (other than the ACCUSATIVE):

| ez     | az     |
| ilyen | ilyenek | ‘such’  | ‘such+PL’ |
| ugyanilyen | ugyanilyenek | ‘same as this’  | ‘same as that+PL’ |
| effélé | effélék | ‘this kind’ | ‘these kinds’ |
| ekkora | ekkorák | ‘this size’  | ‘this size+PL’ |
| ugyanekkoráka | ugyanekkorák | ‘this same size’ | ‘this same size+PL’ |
| ennyi | annyi | ‘this much’  | ‘that much’ |
| ugyanennyi | ugyanannyi | ‘this same amount’ | ‘that same amount’ |

NOMINATIVE
ACCUSATIVE
DATIVE
INSTRUMENTAL
caustral-final
TRANSLATIVE
INASSIVE
SUPERASSIVE
ADESSIVE
ILLATIVE
ELATIVE
DELATIVE
SUBLATIVE
ARLATIVE
ALLATIVE
TERMINATIVE
TEMPORAL
DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL

Note that ennyi ‘this much’, annyi ‘that much’, ugyanennyi ‘this same amount’, ugyanannyi ‘that same amount’ do not have plural forms.
### 6. Pronouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>DISTRIBUTIVE</th>
<th>ASSOCIATIVE</th>
<th>FORMALIS</th>
<th>ESSIVE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>ekként</td>
<td>akként</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Demonstrative pronouns of the basic set that qualify nouns have to agree with the noun in number and case:

*ezt a fehér galambot*  
*ezeket a fehér galambokat*  
*ennek a fehér galambnak*  
*ezeknek a fehér galamboknak*

\[ \text{‘this}\text{+ACC white pigeon}\text{+ACC’} \]
\[ \text{‘this}\text{+PL+ACC white pigeon}\text{+PL+ACC’} \]
\[ \text{‘this}\text{+DATITIVE white pigeon}\text{+DATITIVE’} \]
\[ \text{‘this}\text{+PL+DATITIVE white pigeon}\text{+PL+DATITIVE’} \]

Demonstrative pronouns of the extended set do not agree with the noun in number and case when they qualify nouns (they stand in the SINGULAR NOMINATIVE):

*ilyen galamb*  
*ilyen galambok*  
*ilyen galambot*  
*ilyen galambokat*

\[ \text{‘a pigeon like this’} \]
\[ \text{‘pigeons like these’} \]
\[ \text{‘a pigeon like this}\text{+ACC’} \]
\[ \text{‘pigeons like these}\text{+ACC’} \]

\[ \text{Note that the accusative of ilyen, olyan is typically ilyet, olyat instead of the regular ilyent, olyant (which are also used):} \]

*Látta már ilyet(n)?*  
*Nem akarok olyat(n).*

\[ \text{‘Have you seen anything like this?’} \]
\[ \text{‘I don’t want something like that.’} \]

### 6.2 Possessive Pronouns

Unlike English, Hungarian has just one set of possessive pronouns. Only the nominal (‘mine’) series exists, the attributive (‘my’) series does not. Possessive pronouns stand alone as true pronouns and are not used to qualify nouns. In attributive positions the POSSESSIVE is expressed by personal pronouns in the Nominative, and case endings (see Section 23.1 on the Possessive Construction). Each possessive pronoun exists in singular and plural according to the number of the possessed things:

*Ez a galamb az enyém.*  
*Ezek a galambok az enyém.*

\[ \text{‘This pigeon is mine.’} \]
\[ \text{‘These pigeons are mine}\text{+PLURAL’} \]

### 6.3 Personal Pronouns

The personal pronouns are:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1sg</th>
<th>2sg</th>
<th>3sg</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>én</em></td>
<td><em>te</em></td>
<td><em>ő</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\[ 1sg \quad \text{‘I’} \]
\[ 2sg \quad \text{‘you’} \]
\[ 3sg \quad \text{‘he’ or ‘she’} \]

\[ \text{The 2nd person pronouns *te, ti* have alternative forms *ön, önök* and *maga, maguk* which are used in more formal styles. The difference between *te, ti* vs. *ön, önök* / *maga, maguk* corresponds to the difference between German *du, ihr* vs. *Sie*. The pronouns *ön, önök* / *maga, maguk* take the regular nominal case endings (e.g. Accusative *ön, magát*, Dative *önnek, magának*, etc.) Note that although these pronouns are second person pronouns, they require third person verb forms.} \]

Compare:

*Te hova mész?*  
*Maga/Ön hova megy?*

\[ \text{‘Where are you going?’} \]
\[ \text{‘Where are you going?’} \]

\[ \text{Note that there is no gender distinction in the 3rd person singular. ő and its corresponding inflected forms may equally mean ‘he’ or ‘she’ (or rarely ‘it’)} \]
6.3.1 Case

Personal pronouns may be inflected for most of the cases. Most of the inflected pronominal forms consist of a given variant of a case suffix functioning as a stem plus a POSSESSIVE/PERSON ending. Personal pronouns show no gender distinction.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>1sg</th>
<th>2sg</th>
<th>3sg</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>NOMINATIVE</td>
<td>én ‘I’</td>
<td>te ‘you’</td>
<td>ó ‘he/she/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACCUSATIVE</td>
<td>engem ‘me’</td>
<td>tégéd ‘you’</td>
<td>őr ‘him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DATIVE</td>
<td>nekem ‘for me’</td>
<td>neked ‘for you’</td>
<td>neki ‘for him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INSTRUMENTAL</td>
<td>velem ‘with me’</td>
<td>veled ‘with you’</td>
<td>vele ‘with him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAUSAL-FINAL</td>
<td>értem ‘for me’</td>
<td>érted ‘for you’</td>
<td>érte ‘for him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TRANSLATIVE</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INESSIVE</td>
<td>bennünk ‘in me’</td>
<td>benned ‘in you’</td>
<td>benne ‘in him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUPERESSIVE</td>
<td>raftam ‘on me’</td>
<td>rätad ‘on you’</td>
<td>rätja ‘on him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADATIVE</td>
<td>nálam ‘at me’</td>
<td>nálad ‘at you’</td>
<td>ndla ‘at him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ILLATIVE</td>
<td>belém ‘into me’</td>
<td>beléd ‘into you’</td>
<td>belé ‘into him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ELATIVE</td>
<td>belőlem ‘out of me’</td>
<td>belőled ‘out of you’</td>
<td>beléle ‘out of him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DELATIVE</td>
<td>rólam ‘about me’</td>
<td>rólad ‘about you’</td>
<td>róla ‘about him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUBLATIVE</td>
<td>rám ‘onto me’</td>
<td>rád ‘onto you’</td>
<td>rád ‘onto him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ABLATIVE</td>
<td>tőlem ‘from me’</td>
<td>tőled ‘from you’</td>
<td>tőle ‘from him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ALLATIVE</td>
<td>hozzáam ‘to me’</td>
<td>hozzád ‘to you’</td>
<td>hozzá ‘to him/her/it’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TERMINATIVE</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TEMPORAL</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DISTRIBUTIVE-TEMPORAL</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DISTRIBUTIVE</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ASSOCIATIVE</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FORMALIS</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ESSIVE</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1pl</td>
<td>mi ‘we’</td>
<td>ti ‘you’</td>
<td>õk ‘they’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2pl</td>
<td>minket/bennünk ‘us’</td>
<td>titeket/bennetek ‘you’</td>
<td>õket ‘them’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3pl</td>
<td>nekünk ‘for us’</td>
<td>nektek ‘for you’</td>
<td>nekik ‘for them’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INSTRUMENTAL</td>
<td>velünk ‘with us’</td>
<td>veletek ‘with you’</td>
<td>velük ‘with them’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAUSAL-FINAL</td>
<td>értünk ‘for us’</td>
<td>értetek ‘for you’</td>
<td>értük ‘for them’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TRANSLATIVE</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Similarly to the forms of pronouns inflected for case, some postpositions may form postpositional pronominal forms (see Chapter 5).

6.4 Reflexive Pronouns

6.4.1 Form

The reflexive pronouns are the following:

1sg magam ‘myself’ 1pl magunk ‘ourselves’
2sg magad ‘yourself’ 2pl magatok ‘yourselves’
3sg maga ‘himself/herself/itself’ 3pl maguk ‘themselves’

They can sometimes appear prefixed with ön- (e.g. önmagam, önmagad, etc.) and sajár (sajár magam, sajár magad, etc.).

Reflexive pronouns can be inflected for case like regular nouns (e.g. ACCUSATIVE magam(ət), DATIVE magamnak, SUPERESSIVE magamon, etc.), may receive singular and plural NOMINAL POSSESSIVE endings (e.g. magamé ‘that of my own’, magadé ‘that of your own’), and may have singular and plural NOMINAL POSSESSIVE suffixes + CASE suffixes (e.g. magamet ‘that of my own+ACCUSATIVE’, magadéinak ‘those of your own+DATIVE’).
6. Pronouns

6.4.2 Usage

Reflexive pronouns are used in object or adverbial position if the subject of the sentence and the object/adverbial refer to the same person/thing:

Látja magát a tükörben. ‘(S)he can see herself/himself in the mirror.’

Magában beszél. ‘(S)he talks to herself/himself.’

Some verbs require a reflexive pronoun as a dependent:

elevevet ’burst out laughing’ Elevevet magát. ‘(S)he burst out laughing.’

Reflexive pronouns can be used instead of personal pronouns to express emphasis:

Magam megyek oda. ‘I myself will go there.’

Magáé az etnököt sértették meg. ‘They insulted the president himself/herself.’

They can be used to express the meaning ‘alone’:

Magad vagy a világban. ‘You are alone in this world.’

6.5 Reciprocal pronoun

There is only one reciprocal pronoun:

egyéb ‘each other’

Egyéb can be inflected for case like regular nouns (e.g. ACCUSATIVE egyéb, DATIVE egyébnek, SUPERESSIVE egyébest, etc.), may receive singular and plural NOMINAL POSSESSIVE endings (e.g. egyébő ‘that of each other’, egyébes ‘those of each other’), and may have singular and plural NOMINAL POSSESSIVE suffixes + CASE suffixes (e.g. egyébőnek ‘that of each other+ACCUSATIVE’, egyébesénak ‘those of each other+DATIVE’).

Szeretjük egyéb ‘We love each other’

Nem lehetnek egyébőnek ‘They could not be lovers/husband and wife.’ literally. ‘They could not be each other’s’

6.6 Interrogative and Relative Pronouns, Interrogative and Relative Adverbs

6.6.1 Interrogative pronouns

The interrogative pronouns introduce wh-questions. They are the following:

ki? ‘who?’
mi? ‘what?’
melyik? ‘which?’
milyen? ‘what kind?’
miféle? ‘what sort?’
mekkora? ‘what size?’
hány? ‘how many?’
mennyi? ‘how much?’
hányadik, hányadik? ‘which one (in a sequence: 1st, 2nd, ...)?’

The interrogative pronouns may receive the plural and the same case endings as nouns:

mit? ‘what+ACC?’
miket? ‘what+PL+ACC?’
milyennek? ‘for what kind?’
milyeneknek? ‘for what kind+PL?’
hányadikalt? ‘with which (in a sequence)?’
hánya’dikakal? ‘with which (in a sequence)+PL?’
miféléve? ‘(turn) into what sort?’
mifélékéve? ‘(turn) into what sort+PL?’
melyikben? ‘in which?’
melyekben? ‘in which+PL?’
mennyiből? ‘from how much?’
mekkora? ‘at what size?’
mekkoránál? ‘at what size+PL?’
hánytól? ‘from how many?’
e tc.

Note that hány?, mennyi? do not have a plural. Note also that hánykor? means ‘at which hour?’

50
6. Pronouns

Note that the accusative of milyen is typically milyet? instead of the regular milyen? (which is also used):

Milyet(n)ta lassátad? ‘What kind did you see?’

The interrogative pronouns melyik?, milyen?, mifélé?, mekkora?, hány?, mennyi?, hányadik?, hányadik? may only receive case endings in truly pronominal function, i.e. when they stand alone. They have no case endings when they qualify a noun or an adjective:

Melyik könyvet olvastad? ‘Which book have you read?’
Mennyi vizet fürödöttél? ‘How much water did you bathe in?’
Milyen kulcsot nyitottad ki az ajtó? ‘What kind of key did you open the door with?’

6.6.2 Relative pronouns

Relative pronouns stand at the beginning of dependent (relative clauses) and refer back to something already mentioned in the main clause (their antecedent). They are formed by prefixing a- to interrogative pronouns:

aki ‘who, that’
amely ‘which, that’
ami ‘which’
amelyik ‘the kind of which’
amifélé ‘the sort of which’
amekkora ‘what size’
áhány ‘how many’
amennyi ‘how much’
ahányadik ‘which one (in a sequence: 1st, 2nd…)’

With the exception of áhány, amennyi relative pronouns may receive the plural, and they have to agree with their antecedent in number:

Láttam a lányt, aki a szobában ült. ‘I saw the girl who was sitting in the room.’
Láttam a lányokat, akik a szobában ültek. ‘I saw the girls who were sitting in the room.’

Similarly to interrogative pronouns, relative pronouns may receive case endings as well (their inflection is identical with that of the interrogative pronouns), but they do not have to agree with their antecedent according to case:

6.6.3 Interrogative and relative adverbs

Interrogative adverbs and relative adverbs have a function similar to interrogative pronouns and relative pronouns respectively, but they cannot receive case and plural endings. They are the following:

6.6.3.1 Interrogative Adverbs

hol? ‘where?’
merre? ‘to where?’
hova? / hová? ‘in which direction?’
meddig? ‘up to which point?’
honnan? ‘from where?’
mennyit? ‘from which direction?’
hogy(any)? ‘from which point in time/space?’
nikor? ‘when?’
mióta? ‘since when?’
meddig? ‘how long?’
hogy(any)? ‘how?’
menny ideig? ‘how long?’

Merre messz? ‘In which direction are you going?’
Honnan jön? ‘Where is he/she/it coming from?’
Hogy érzik magukat? ‘How do they feel?’
Menny időr? ‘Until when are you free?’

6.6.3.2 Relative Adverbs

ahol ‘where’
amere ‘in which direction’
ahova / ahová ‘to where’
amanyeddig ‘up to which point, as long as’
ahonnan ‘from where’
amerről ‘from which direction’
amennől ‘from which point in time/space’
amikor ‘when’
amióta ‘since when’
amennől ‘until when’
ameddig ‘how’
ahogy(any)
6. Pronouns

Elmentem a házhoz, ahonnaj jöttem.
‘I went to the house where I came from.’

Mondá meg a pontos időt, amikor találkozunk.
‘Tell me the exact time when we should meet.’

Sometimes the a- prefix of relative pronouns and adverbs can be left out:

Júlia olvasott, (a)mikor hazátért.
‘Julia was reading when I got home.’

Note that there is always a comma before a relative pronoun/adverb, regardless whether the relative clause it introduces is restrictive or non- restrictive.

6.7 Indefinite pronouns

Indefinite pronouns begin with the prefix vala-, bár- or akár-, which is added to interrogative pronouns. The commonest ones are the following:

valaki ‘someone’
valamely ‘some’
valami ‘something’
valamelyik ‘one or the other’
valamilyen ‘some kind of’
valamiféle ‘some kind of’
valamekkora ‘some size’
valahány ‘some number of’
valanennyi ‘some number/amount of’
valahányedik/valahanyadik ‘some item’ (in a sequence: 1st, 2nd...)

bárki akárki ‘anyone’
bármely akármely ‘no matter which’
bármi akámi ‘anything’
bármielyik akármelyik ‘no matter which’
bármiilyen akármilyen ‘no matter what kind’
bármiiféle akármiféle ‘no matter what kind’
bármekkora akármekkora ‘no matter what size’
bármennyi akármennyi ‘much/many’
bárhányadik/ bárhanyadik ‘no matter which one’ (in a sequence: 1st, 2nd...)

Most of them may be used attributively to qualify a noun or non-attributively (pronominaly). Mindenki is typically not used attributively.

Mindenyik barájával találkozott.
‘She met all of her friends.’

Találkozott mindenki.
‘She met one of them.’

Akármekkora követ fel tudott emelni.
‘He could lift a stone of any size.’

Akármekkord fel tudott emeln.
‘He could lift one of any size.’

When used non-attributively, these pronouns may receive the usual nominal case endings, and with the exception of the ones ending in -hány, -nennyi may occur in the plural.

Találkozott valamelyikkel.
‘He could lift one of them.’

Akármekkord fel tudott emelni.
‘He could lift one of any size.’

6.8 Universal pronouns

The universal pronouns are the following:

mindenki ‘everybody’
minden ‘everything/all’
mindenyik ‘every, each’
mindenféle ‘all kinds’

Most of them may be used attributively to qualify a noun or non-attributively (pronominaly). Mindenki is typically not used attributively.

Mindenyik barájával találkozott.
‘She met all of her friends.’

Találkozott mindenki.
‘She met all of them.’

Mindennék könyvet el tudott olvasni.
‘He could read all kinds of books.’

Mindennék et tudott olvasni.
‘He could read all kinds of things.’

When used non-attributively, these pronouns may receive the usual nominal case endings, and may occur in the plural.

Találkozott mindenyikkel.
‘She met all minden (of them).’

Mindennék et tudott olvasni.
‘He could read all kinds of things.’

6.9 Negative pronouns

The negative pronouns are the following:

senki ‘nobody’
semmi ‘nothing’
semelyik ‘not any of them’
6. Pronouns

semmilyen  'not of any kind'
semmiféle 'not of any kind'
semekkora  'not of any size'

Most of them may be used attributively to qualify a noun or non-attributively (pronominally). Senki and semmi are typically not used attributively. (See Section 23.4 on double negation).

Semelyik barátjával nem találkozott. 'She met none of her friends.'
Nem találkozott semelyikkal sem. 'She met none (of them).'

Semmilyen könyvet nem tudott olvasni. 'He could read no kind of book.'
Semmilye(n) sem tudott olvasni. 'He could read no kind.'

When used non-attributively, these pronouns may receive the usual nominal case endings, and may occur in the plural.

Nem találkozott semelyikkel sem. 'She met none (of them).'
Semmilye(n) sem tudott olvasni. 'He could read no kind.'

7. Adjectives and Adverbs

7.1 Adjectives

Adjectives may be used attributively or non-attributively. In attributive function they precede the nouns (or the nouns modified by other adjectives) that they modify:

egy nagy kutya  'a big dog'
a szép lány  'the beautiful girl'
hét szomorú szürke szamár 'seven sad grey donkeys'

In attributive function adjectives may not receive CASE or the PLURAL, and thus appear unsuffixed:

nagy kutyák  'a big dogs'
a szép lányról 'about the beautiful girl' (DELATIVE)
hét szomorú szürke szamárnak  'for seven sad grey donkeys' (DATIVE)

Adjectives in non-attributive function are basically predicative. In this case they agree in number with the subject:

Ez a ház hatalmas. 'This house is huge.'
A szeme sötétkék volt. 'Her/his eye was dark blue.'

Adjectives can stand for adjective+noun groups whose noun has already been mentioned or is known from the context (just like pronouns can stand for nouns or noun groups):

Melyik ló nyert?  'Which horse won?'
Két diáknak a szobában. 'There were two students in the room.'

A fekete.  'The black one.'
A szőke olvasott. 'The blond one was reading.'
7. Adjectives and Adverbs

When adjectives stand for adjective+noun groups, they function as nouns and thus may receive the usual nominal CASE endings and the PLURAL suffix:

A két kutya köszül a feketén a füle félér.
'Of the two dogs the black one's (+DAT) ear is white.'

Ne vallad meg a drágát, amikor az olsó is eléj jó.
'Don't buy the expensive one(+ACC) when the cheap one (NOM) is good enough'

A rosszakról ne is beszéljünk!
'Let's not talk about the bad ones(+PL+DEL).'?

Annak a magasnak hostam egy kis ajándékot.
'I've brought a little present for that tall one(+DAT).'?

Note that adjectives behave as Lowering Stems when they receive suffixes: e.g. magas 'tall+ACC', magasak 'tall+PL', vöröset 'red+ACC', vörösek 'red+PL', zöldet 'green+ACC', zöldek 'green+PL' etc.

There are some exceptional non-lowering adjectival stems: agg 'very old': aggot 'very old+PL', aggat 'very old+ACC', nagy 'big' nág yok 'big+PL', nágyat 'big+ACC'. All adjectives denoting nationalities are non-lowering: görögök 'Greek+PL', angolok 'English+PL', etc.

Note that the adjective kis 'small' cannot be used predicatively; in predicative function the adjective kicsi 'small' occurs instead:

Ez egy kicsi könyv.
'This is a small book.'

Ez a könyv kicsi.
'This book is small.'

When proper names are used as adjectives they usually no longer begin with a capital letter. Compare

Azt hiszem Japán sziget.
'I think Japan is an island.'

A japán kakasok kicsik.
'Japanese roosters are small.'

Hol van Anglia?
'Where is England?'

Az angol kocsik nagyvélők.
'English cars are wonderful.'

7.1.1 Comparative and Superlative forms

Most adjectives have endings that indicate comparative and superlative degree.

The comparative ending after consonant-final stems is -abb -bb where the choice of the variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
<th>English</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>low (voice)</td>
<td>halkabb</td>
<td>lower (voice)</td>
<td>halkabb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rich</td>
<td>gazdagabb</td>
<td>richer</td>
<td>gazdagabb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>round</td>
<td>kerékabb</td>
<td>rounder</td>
<td>kerékabb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hot</td>
<td>melegebb</td>
<td>hotter</td>
<td>melegebb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>strong</td>
<td>erősobb</td>
<td>stronger</td>
<td>erősobb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>green</td>
<td>zöldabb</td>
<td>greener</td>
<td>zöldabb</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The vowel of the comparative ending is unstable; the vowelless variant -bb occurs after stems that end in a vowel:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>black</td>
<td>fekete</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stupid</td>
<td>buta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cheap</td>
<td>olsó</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sad</td>
<td>szomorú</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sour</td>
<td>keserű</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sneaky</td>
<td>sunity</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The superlative is similar to the comparative, but in addition to the -abb / -ebbi / -bb suffix the stem takes the non-harmonic leg - prefix as well:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>leghalabb</td>
<td>lowest (voice)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>leggazdagabb</td>
<td>richest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legkerékabb</td>
<td>roundest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legmelegebb</td>
<td>hottest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legerősabb</td>
<td>strongest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legzöldabb</td>
<td>greenest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legfeketebb</td>
<td>blackest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legbutabb</td>
<td>stupidest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legolsó</td>
<td>cheapest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legsomorúbb</td>
<td>saddest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legkeserűbb</td>
<td>sourest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legsunity</td>
<td>sneakest</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Comparative and superlative forms are often used with the suffix -ik indicating 'unique identification'. The suffix -ik can only occur when the noun phrase is definite or when the noun phrase the adjective stands for is definite.

Egy erősobb lovát akarok.
'I want a stronger horse.'

Az erősabb lovát akarom.
'I want the stronger horse.'

Egy erősább lovát akarom.
'I want the strongest horse.'

Egy erősébbet akarok.
'I want a stronger one.'
7. Adjectives and Adverbs

7.1.2 Irregular adjectives

Some adjectival stems have irregular comparative and superlative forms:
- jól ‘good’ jobb ‘better’ legjobb ‘best’
- szép ‘beautiful’ szébb ‘more beautiful’ legszebb ‘most beautiful’
- sok ‘many, much’ több ‘more’ legtöbb ‘most’
- kicsi ‘small’ kisebb ‘smaller’ legkisebb ‘smallest’

Note that kisebb and legkisebb are pronounced with a long [ː]: [kijːɛbː], [lekːiːɛbː].

The four adjectives below retain their stem-final vowel in the comparative and the superlative:
- hosszú ‘long’ hosszabb ‘longer’ leghosszabb ‘longest’
- könnyű ‘light’ könnyebb ‘lighter’ legkönnyebb ‘lightest’
- lassú ‘slow’ lassabb ‘slower’ leglassabb ‘slowest’
- ifjú ‘young’ ifjabb ‘younger’ legifjabb ‘youngest’

Bó ‘loose’ is a v-stem in the comparative and the superlative:
- bő ‘loose’ bővebb ‘looser’ legbővebb ‘loosest’

Some adjectives are vowel-shortening stems in the comparative and the superlative:
- kevés ‘few, little’ kevesebb ‘fewer, less’ legkevesebb ‘fewest, least’
- derék ‘honest’ derekabb ‘more honest’ legderekabb ‘most honest’
- személy ‘mean’ szemétebb ‘meaner’ legszemétebb ‘meanest’

Note that derék ‘honest’ is an anti-harmonic stem, i.e., it exceptionally takes the back-vowel variants of harmonizing suffixes (See Chapter 1).

Some adjectives exceptionally do not have a suffix in the superlative:
- alsó ‘bottom’ alsóbb ‘lower’ legalsó ‘lowest’
- felső ‘top’ felsőbb ‘higher’ legfelső ‘highest’
- külső ‘outside’ külsőbb ‘outer’ legkülső ‘outermost’
- belső ‘inside’ belsőbb ‘inner’ legbelső ‘innermost’
- szélső ‘side’ szélsőbb ‘more to the side’ legszélső ‘outermost’

Note that nagyobb ‘bigger’, legnagyobb ‘biggest’ have -obb instead of the regular -abb.

7.2 Adverbs

Adverbs modify adjectives, verbs or clauses. Some adverbs have no special endings (e.g., othon ‘at home’, itt ‘here’, ott ‘there’, holnap ‘tomorrow’; rögtön ‘immediately’, saka ‘never’, néha ‘sometimes’, gyakori ‘on foot’, etc.), others have adverb-forming suffixes.

There is a more or less regular way of deriving adverbs from adjectives by suffixing -an-, -en, -ül- to adjectival stems. The choice between the variants -an vs. -en and -ül vs. -ul is determined by Vowel Harmony, but the choice between -an-en vs. -ül-ül is somewhat idiosyncratic. After vowel-final stems, a vowelless variant of these suffixes is used (see Chapter 22 on word-formation).

- erősen ‘strongly’ rosszul ‘badly’
- gyengén ‘weakly’ jól ‘well’

Note that nagyon means ‘very’ or ‘strongly’ (Nagyon édes. ‘(S)he is very sweet’, Nagyon megütötte ‘(S)He hit him/her hard’).

The names of languages require the -ül-ül suffix to express the meaning ‘in a given language’: angolul ‘in English’, németül ‘in German’, etc.

7.2.1 Comparative and superlative forms

The comparison of comparable adverbs is formed like that of adjectives. The comparative suffix precedes the adverbial suffixes mentioned above:

- vadul ‘wildly’ szelidén ‘gently’
- vadabbul ‘more wildly’ szelidébben ‘more gently’
- legvadabbul ‘most wildly’ legszéldebben ‘most gently’

Note the irregular comparisons:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>COMPARATIVE</th>
<th>SUPERLATIVE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>jól</td>
<td>jobban</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kint, kiinn</td>
<td>lejebbold</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bent, benn</td>
<td>legbent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fej, fent</td>
<td>feljebb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lent, lenn</td>
<td>lejebb</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

60
7.3 Comparative Constructions

Equality (or its negation) is expressed by the base form of adjectives and adverbs and the construction: olyan ADJ/ADV base mint X:

János olyan lassú, mint én.
‘John is as slow as I am.’

János nem olyan lassú, mint én.
‘John is not as slow as I am.’

Ez a toll olyan jó, mint az enyém.
‘This pen is as good as mine.’

Ez a toll nem olyan jó, mint az enyém.
‘This pen is not as good as mine.’

Olyan gyorsan vezet, mint János.
‘(S)He drives as fast as John does.’

Nem olyan gyorsan vezet, mint János.
‘(S)He does not drive as fast as John does.’

Inequality (or its negation) may be expressed by the comparative form of adjectives and adverbs and the construction:

**ADJ/ADV+COMP mint ... X+NOM or ADJ/ADV+COMP ... X+ADESSIVE**

János lassabb, mint Péter.
‘John is slower than Peter.’

János lassabb, mint én.
‘John is slower than I am.’

János nem lassabb, mint én.
‘John is not slower than I am.’

Ez a toll jobb, mint az enyém.
‘This pen is better than mine.’

Ez a toll nem jobb, mint az enyém.
‘This pen is not better than mine.’

Gyorsabban vezet, mint János.
‘(S)He drives faster than John.’

Nem vezet gyorsabban, mint János.
‘(S)He does not drive as fast as John.’

Superlative inequality (or its negation) may be expressed by the superlative form of adjectives and adverbs preceded by the definite article a(t):

János a leghostabb.
‘John is the slowest.’

János nem a legfastabb.
‘John is not the slowest.’

Ez a toll a legjobb.
‘This pen is the best.’

Ez a toll nem a legjobb.
‘This pen is not the best.’

János vezet a leggyorsabbabb.
‘John drives fastest.’

Nem János vezet a leggyorsabbabb.
‘It’s not John who drives fastest.’

Note that in the superlative construction the postposition közül often appears to identify the group from which the selection is made:

János a leglassabb a fiúk közül.
‘John is the slowest of the boys.’
8. Numerals

Numerals can be used attributively and non-attributively. When used to qualify nouns, numbers precede the nouns they qualify: e.g. egy kutyat 'one dog', a negyedik kutya ‘the fourth dog’. Numbers can be used as nouns in which case they can take the usual nominal case endings: e.g. négyet ‘four-ACCUSATIVE’, a hatodikban ‘in the sixth’.

8.1 Cardinal Numbers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0</td>
<td>nulla, semmi</td>
<td>zero</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>egy [ˈɛɡː]</td>
<td>one</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>kettő, két</td>
<td>two</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>három</td>
<td>three</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>négy</td>
<td>four</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>öt</td>
<td>five</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>hat</td>
<td>six</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>hét</td>
<td>seven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>nyolc</td>
<td>eight</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>kilenc</td>
<td>nine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>tíz</td>
<td>ten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>tizenegy</td>
<td>eleven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>tizenkettő, tizenkét</td>
<td>twelve</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>tizenhárom</td>
<td>thirteen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>tizennégy</td>
<td>fourteen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>tizenőt</td>
<td>fifteen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>tizenhat</td>
<td>sixteen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>tizenhét</td>
<td>seventeen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>tíznyolc</td>
<td>eighteen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>tízkilenc</td>
<td>nineteen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>husz</td>
<td>twenty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>huszonymegy</td>
<td>twenty-one</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>huszonkettő</td>
<td>twenty-two</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>huszonhárom</td>
<td>twenty-three</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>huszonnégy</td>
<td>twenty-four</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

8.2 Ordinal Numbers

Ordinal numbers are formed by adding the harmonising suffix -odik/-edik/-ődik (and -edik in the case of Lowering Stems) to a cardinal number:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>első</td>
<td>first</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>második</td>
<td>second</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>harmadik</td>
<td>third</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### 8. Numerals

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ordinal</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>4th</td>
<td>negyedik</td>
<td>23rd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5th</td>
<td>öödik</td>
<td>24th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6th</td>
<td>hatodik</td>
<td>25th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7th</td>
<td>heredik</td>
<td>26th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8th</td>
<td>nyolcadik</td>
<td>27th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9th</td>
<td>kilencedik</td>
<td>28th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10th</td>
<td>üzedik</td>
<td>29th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11th</td>
<td>tizenegyedik</td>
<td>30th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12th</td>
<td>tizenkettedik</td>
<td>31st</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13th</td>
<td>tizenhamadik</td>
<td>40th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14th</td>
<td>tizenegyedik</td>
<td>50th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15th</td>
<td>tizenőödik</td>
<td>60th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16th</td>
<td>tizenhatodik</td>
<td>70th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17th</td>
<td>tizenhetedik</td>
<td>80th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18th</td>
<td>tizennyolcadik</td>
<td>90th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19th</td>
<td>tizenkilencedik</td>
<td>100th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20th</td>
<td>huszadik</td>
<td>1000th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21st</td>
<td>huszonnyolcadik</td>
<td>1 000 000th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22nd</td>
<td>huszonkettedik</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note the irregular első '1st'. Note also that the stem-final a of nulladik does not lengthen to å (see Section 1.5).

-odikl-öödikl-ädik is a lowering suffix: huszadikat '20th ACC'.

Ordinals lose their -ik ending before the harmonizing suffix -szor/-szer/ször: öödzsör 'the 5th time', negyedszor 'the 4th time', harmadszor 'the 3rd time'. Note also the irregular elsőször 'the 1st time' and másodszor 'the 2nd time'.

When written with numbers, ordinals are followed by a period: 3. kiadás = harmadik kiadás '3rd edition'.

### 8.3 Fractions

Fractions are formed by suffixing the harmonizing ending -odi-edi-öd (and -ad in the case of Lowering Stems) to a cardinal number: hatod, heted, ööd, etc. Fractions can combine with a preceding ordinal: egyhatod '1/6', öötheted '5/7', négyötöd '4/5', etc.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Fraction</th>
<th>Hungarian</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1/2</td>
<td>egyketted</td>
<td>1/8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1/3</td>
<td>egyharmad</td>
<td>1/9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1/4</td>
<td>egynegyed</td>
<td>1/10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1/5</td>
<td>egyööd</td>
<td>1/20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1/6</td>
<td>egyhatod</td>
<td>1/100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1/7</td>
<td>egyheted</td>
<td>1/1000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that harmad, nyolcad, huszad, század have -ad instead of the regular -od.

ketted never appears without an initial ordinal. Egyketted is mainly used in mathematics. Its everyday equivalent is fél 'half'.

66
9. Verbs

9.1 Structure

In Hungarian a conjugated verb form consists of the stem plus two inflectional slots, i.e. positions where inflectional suffixes can occur. The first of these suffix positions is that of TENSE/MOOD and the second one is that of PERSON/NUMBER.

Thus, schematically the structure of the verb is:

\[ \text{Stem} + \text{TENSE/MOOD} + \text{PERSON/NUMBER} \]

Examples:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Tense/Mood</th>
<th>Person/Number</th>
<th>Gloss</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>vár</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>'they waited'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vár</td>
<td>II</td>
<td></td>
<td>'I would wait'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vár</td>
<td></td>
<td>II</td>
<td>'you (pl) wait!'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Both TENSE/MOOD and PERSON/NUMBER may be expressed by a zero suffix. Therefore, either (or both) of these suffix slots may remain empty:

Examples:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Tense/Mood</th>
<th>Person/Number</th>
<th>Gloss</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>vár</td>
<td>I</td>
<td></td>
<td>'he waited'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vár</td>
<td>II</td>
<td></td>
<td>'I wait'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vár</td>
<td></td>
<td>II</td>
<td>'(s)he/it waits'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that the last form above (present 3rd person singular indefinite = the bare verb stem) is the usual 'dictionary form' for verbs in Hungarian.

The TENSE/MOOD slot expresses Present, Past, Conditional and Conjunctive-Imperative. The lack of Future is due to the fact that future time is not expressed by a separate suffix, but the Present and other complex forms are used to express it (see Chapter 15 and Section 16.1). In addition to the usual person and number distinctions the PERSON/NUMBER slot expresses the '(in)definiteness' of the object of the verb.

10. Definiteness: the Definite and Indefinite Conjugations

In Hungarian, different verb forms are used depending on whether the object of the verb is 'definite' or 'indefinite'. This distinction does not exist in English: compare the following sentences and their English translations:

\[ \text{Olvas} \text{ egý könyvet}. \quad \text{I am reading a book.} \]
\[ \text{Olvas} \text{ a könyvet}. \quad \text{I am reading the book.} \]

The 'definite' vs. 'indefinite' contrast is present no matter what TENSE/MOOD suffix the PERSON/NUMBER suffix combines with, i.e. it exists in the Present, the Past, the Conditional and the Conjunctive-Imperative.

\[ \text{Olvas} \text{ egy könyvet}. \quad (S)he is reading a book.' \]
\[ \text{Olvas} \text{ a könyvet}. \quad (S)he is reading the book.' \]
\[ \text{Olvasott} \text{ egy könyvet}. \quad (S)he was reading a book.' \]
\[ \text{Olvasta} \text{ a könyvet}. \quad (S)he was reading the book.' \]
\[ \text{Ha olvasnék} \text{ egy könyvet, megnyugodnék}. \quad 'If I read a book, I would calm down.' \]
\[ \text{Ha olvasnám} \text{ a könyvet, megnyugodnék}. \quad 'If I read the book, I would calm down.' \]
\[ \text{Olvass} \text{ egy könyvet!} \quad 'Read a book!' \]
\[ \text{Olvasd} \text{ a könyvet!} \quad 'Read the book!' \]

Thus the Hungarian verb has two conjugations (i.e. the PERSON/NUMBER suffixes fall into two classes): indefinite and definite.

Note that in two cases, namely in the 1SG PAST and the 1PL CONDITIONAL, there is no difference between the definite and the indefinite forms (i.e. the definiteness contrast is neutralized):

\[ \text{Olvas} \text{am} \text{ egy könyvet}. \quad 'I read a book.' \]
\[ \text{Olvas} \text{am} \text{ a könyvet}. \quad 'I read the book.' \]
\[ \text{Olvasnánk} \text{ egy könyvet}. \quad 'We would read a book.' \]
\[ \text{Olvasnánk} \text{ a könyvet}. \quad 'We would read the book.' \]
10. Definiteness

10.1 Usage
The general rule for the choice of the definite vs. the indefinite conjugation is the following:

An indefinite verb form is used if the verb is (a) intransitive (Futok, 'I am running.') or (b) if it has a direct object which counts as indefinite.

A definite verb form is used if the verb has a direct object which counts as definite.

10.1.1 Direct object phrases which count as indefinite
A direct object phrase counts as indefinite (and requires the indefinite conjugation) if it is:

- a noun phrase with an indefinite article:
  
  *Olvasok egy könyvet.*
  
  'I am reading a book.'

- a noun phrase with no article (and it is not a proper noun):
  
  *Cápac látt a medencében.*
  
  'He saw a shark in the pool.'

* Note that in the same position a proper noun would require a definite verb form:

  *Júlia látt a medencében.*

  'She saw Julia in the pool.'

- a noun phrase premodified by a numeral (without the definite article):
  
  *Hét cápac látt a medencében.*

  'She saw seven sharks in the pool.'

- a first or second person pronoun (but not a reflexive pronoun):
  
  *Kristóf ismer engemítéged.*

  'Christopher knows me/you.'

* Note that a first/second person reflexive pronoun would require a definite verb form:

  *Kristóf ismeri magát.*

  'Christopher knows himself.'

* Note that a special -laki-leki alaki-elek suffix is used instead of the normal indefinite suffix in the 1st person singular if there is a second person object (see Sections 11.3, 12.4, 13.4 and 14.4.).

- an interrogative pronoun (but not the ones that contain an -ik and have unique identification), e.g. kit 'who', mit 'what', hány, hányat 'how many', milyen, milyen 'what sort':

  *Mit akarsz?*  
  
  'What do you want?'

- one of the following set of pronouns:

  minden 'everything'

  ennyi  'this many/much'

  annyi  'that many/much'

  semmi  'nothing'

  semmilyen 'no kind'

  senki  'nobody'

  valaki  'someone'

  valamennyi  'some amount'

  valami  'something'

  valamilyen  'some kind'

  *Nem szeretett senki.*

  '(S)he did not love anybody.'

- a noun phrase whose noun is premodified by any of the interrogative pronouns or pronouns listed above:

  *Milyen könyvet olvassott?*  
  
  'What kind of a book did (s)he read?'

  *Minden könyvet olvassott*  

  '(S)he read every book.'

- expressed with a construction whose verb is an infinitive:

  *Még akarok tanulni magyarul.*  
  
  'I want to learn Hungarian.'

10.1.2 Direct object phrases which count as definite
A direct object counts as definite (and requires the definite conjugation) if it is:

- a proper noun with or without a definite article:

  *Júlia látt a medencében.*

  '(S)he saw Julia in the pool.'

  *A Dunát láttá.*

  '(S)he saw the Danube.'

- a noun phrase with a definite article:

  *Olvasom a könyvet.*

  'I am reading the book.'

Note the this is not valamennyi 'all', which requires a definite verb (see below)
10. Definiteness

- a possessive noun phrase:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Olvasom a könyvet.} & \quad \text{‘I am reading my book.’} \\
\text{Olvasom Péter könyvét.} & \quad \text{‘I am reading Peter’s book.’}
\end{align*}
\]

- a third person pronoun:

\[
\text{Látom Ő.} \quad \text{‘I see her/him.’}
\]

- the demonstrative pronoun ez/az ‘this/that’, the universal pronouns minden ‘all’, valamennyi ‘all’, a reflexive pronoun, a reciprocal pronoun, or a possessive pronoun:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Látom azt.} & \quad \text{‘I see that.’} \\
\text{Látom valamennyit.} & \quad \text{‘I see all of them.’} \\
\text{Látom magamat.} & \quad \text{‘I see myself.’} \\
\text{Látjak egymást.} & \quad \text{‘They see each other.’} \\
\text{Látom az enyém.} & \quad \text{‘I see mine.’}
\end{align*}
\]

- a pronoun of the ‘ik’ group (melyik ‘which [one]’, hánydik, ‘which [one] in a sequence’, valamelyik ‘any one’, egyik ‘one [of them]’, másik ‘the other’, mindégük ‘each and every one’, semelyik ‘neither/none’):

\[
\text{Melyiket látom?} \quad \text{‘Which one do I see?’}
\]

- a noun phrase whose noun is premodified by a pronoun listed under the previous two points:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Melyik kutya látom?} & \quad \text{‘Which dog do I see?’} \\
\text{Látom az a kutya.} & \quad \text{‘I see that dog.’} \\
\text{Látom valamennyi kutyaát.} & \quad \text{‘I see all the dogs.’}
\end{align*}
\]

- expressed by a clause:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Látom, hogy ott áll.} & \quad \text{‘I see that he/she/it is standing there.’} \\
\text{Látom, ha bejön.} & \quad \text{‘I’ll see if he/she/it comes in.’}
\end{align*}
\]

2 Note that this is not valamennyi ‘some amount’, which requires an indefinite verb (see above), e.g. Látok valamennyit. ‘I see some (of them).’

11. The Present Tense

The Present Tense is unmarked (i.e. it is expressed by a zero suffix in the TENSE/MOOD slot). The person/number distinctions and the definiteness distinctions are expressed by suffixes in the PERSON/NUMBER slot.

11.1 Present Indefinite

The indefinite PERSON/NUMBER suffixes are the following in the Present Tense:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1ST -ok/-ek/-ők</td>
<td>-unk/-ünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2ND -szl/-asz/ -esz</td>
<td>-tokl-tekl-tökl-otokl- -ekl-őtk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3RD ø</td>
<td>-nakl/-nekl/-anakl- enek</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- These suffixes are harmonizing two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ad} & \quad \text{ver} & \text{lők} & \text{höz} & \text{vés} & \text{főz} \\
\text{‘give’} & \text{‘be’} & \text{‘push’} & \text{‘bring’} & \text{‘chisel’} & \text{‘cook’} \\
\text{SG 1ST adok} & \text{verek} & \text{lőkök} & \text{hözök} & \text{vészek} & \text{fősök} \\
\text{2ND adsz} & \text{versz} & \text{lőksz} & \text{hozol} & \text{vésel} & \text{főzöl} \\
\text{3RD ad} & \text{ver} & \text{lők} & \text{höz} & \text{vés} & \text{főz} \\
\text{PL 1ST adunk} & \text{verünk} & \text{lőkünk} & \text{honzuk} & \text{vésünk} & \text{főzünk} \\
\text{2ND adok} & \text{vertek} & \text{lőtkök} & \text{h oztok} & \text{véste k} & \text{főstöök} \\
\text{3RD adnak} & \text{vernek} & \text{lőknak} & \text{honznak} & \text{vésnek} & \text{főznek}
\end{align*}
\]
11. The Present Tense

11.1.1 The 2SG INDEF suffix and sibilant-final stems

Some of the variation in the present indefinite suffixes in the table above is not due to Vowel Harmony. Notably, in the second person singular, the usual -sz suffix is replaced by the harmonizing three-form suffix -öl-ell-öl if the stem ends in a sibilant, i.e., sz, s, dz. Compare with:

- hoz ‘bring’
- végs ‘chisel’
- főz ‘cook’
- ad ‘give’
- ver ‘beat’
- lők ‘push’

2SG INDEF hozol
vels fel föl ad ver lők

11.1.2 the 2SG, 2PL, 3PL INDEF suffixes and cluster-final stems

There is some additional variation not shown in the table above. The second person singular -sz, the second person plural suffix -otki-teki-tők and the third person plural suffix -nak/-nek have vowel-initial variants as well (-assz-, -otoki-eteki-tők and -anaki-enek respectively). These variants appear if the stem ends in a consonant cluster or in -it:

2SG
- old ‘untie’
- oldasz

2PL
- oldotok
- oldanak

3PL
- oldanak

verbs that end in t preceded by a long vowel but not the suffix -it often behave in an idiosyncratic way. The relevant stems are the following: bocsát ‘forgive’, fát ‘heat’, hütt ‘cool’, lát ‘see’, lát(fut) ‘run a lot, never stop’, műt ‘operate’, szüt ‘stir up’, tát ‘open wide’, vét ‘err’:

2SG
- bocsát

2PL
- bocsát(ok)

3PL
- bocsátanak

11.2 Present Definite

The definite PERSON/NUMBER suffixes are the following in the Present Tense:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1ST</td>
<td>-omi/emi-öm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2ND</td>
<td>-odl-edl-öd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3RD</td>
<td>-ja/i</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the table above (and henceforward) the symbol □ indicates that the preceding consonant has to be doubled, i.e. the stem-final consonant geminates before the suffix vowel (e.g. hom+□uk → homok [homuk] ‘wash’ (1PL PERS DEF); visz+□ük → viszük [vivsük] ‘carry’ (1PL PERS DEF)).

- The present definite suffixes are harmonizing two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony (note that sometimes the variants are very different: compare the front variant -i vs. the back variant -ja in the 3sg):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ad</th>
<th>ver</th>
<th>lők</th>
<th>hoz</th>
<th>végs</th>
<th>föz</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>‘give’</td>
<td>‘beat’</td>
<td>‘push’</td>
<td>‘bring’</td>
<td>‘chisel’</td>
<td>‘cook’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
11. The Present Tense

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>adam</th>
<th>verem</th>
<th>lőköm</th>
<th>hozom</th>
<th>vésem</th>
<th>főzöm</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>adod</td>
<td>vered</td>
<td>lőkőd</td>
<td>hozod</td>
<td>vésed</td>
<td>főzdő</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>adja</td>
<td>veri</td>
<td>lőki</td>
<td>hozza</td>
<td>vési</td>
<td>főzi</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl</td>
<td>1st</td>
<td>adjak</td>
<td>verjük</td>
<td>lőkjük</td>
<td>hozzük</td>
<td>véssük</td>
<td>főssük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>adjátok</td>
<td>veriték</td>
<td>lókiték</td>
<td>hozzátok</td>
<td>vésitek</td>
<td>fősitek</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>adják</td>
<td>verik</td>
<td>lőtik</td>
<td>hozzik</td>
<td>vézik</td>
<td>főzik</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

11.2.1 The 3sc DEF suffix and the plural definite suffixes

The 3rd person singular suffix and all the plural definite suffixes have variants that cause gemination of the stem final consonant if the consonant is one of the sibilants s, z, s, dz (in the table showing the definite suffixes, we have indicated these variants with the special initial symbol []).

Note that in the 1st person plural, the gemination of the stem-final sibilant happens both in back and front stems (e.g. hozzák AND véssük, főssük). By contrast, in the 3rd person singular and the plural 2nd and 3rd persons, the gemination-inducing suffix variant only combines with back sibilant-final stems: compare hozza BUT vézi főzi (3sg); hozzátok BUT vésitek, fősitek (2pl); hozzák BUT vézik, főzik (3pl).

Note that the j-initial suffix variants may cause assimilation which is unindicated in the spelling (e.g. adjá [adjá]). For the actual pronunciation of the consonant clusters consisting of a consonant+j see Section 1.3.4 on Palatalization.

11.3. 1sg subject 2sg/pl object: the -lak/-lek/-alak/-elek suffix

If the subject of the verb is 1st person singular and the object is 2nd person singular/plural, a special -lak/-lek/-alak/-elek suffix is used instead of the regular indefinite conjugation (recall that 2nd person objects count as indefinite otherwise).

Compare:

1sg* 2sg/pl*  
- Én látak téged.  vs.  Ő lát téged.  'I see you.'  
- Én nézlek téged.  'I watch you.'

Again, some verbs which end in consonant clusters exceptionally do not take the suffix-initial vowel. All verbs ending in a geminate consonant belong to this group (e.g. vár 'wait'; várjuk).

Note that 1sg* 2sg/pl* forms of verbs that end in geminate -ll are only spelt with two l's (e.g. rühel 'hate, despise' – rühellek 'I hate you') in spite of the fact that these forms may coincide in spelling and in pronounciation with the PRES 1sg INDEF form (e.g. rühellek 'I hate sg.'; Rühellek mosogatn. 'I hate washing up.').

Note that Vowel-deleting Stems take the non-vowel-initial variants of the 1sg* 2sg/pl* suffix: e.g. morog 'growl'; moroglak 'I growl at you'. See Section 19.1 on Vowel-deleting Stems.

For the use of the Present Tense, see Chapter 16.

---

1. This can only happen with front stems. The corresponding forms of back stems would be non-identical since the 1sg INDEF suffix is -ok, e.g. hall 'hear': hallak 'I hear you' but hallók 'I hear (SG)'.
12. The Past Tense

The Past Tense is marked with the past tense suffix which appears in the TENSE/MOOD slot following the verb stem. The person/number distinctions and the definiteness distinctions are expressed by suffixes in the PERSON/NUMBER slot.

12.1 The Past Tense suffix

The past tense suffix immediately follows the stem and may be followed by a definite or indefinite PERSON/NUMBER suffix. It has the following variants:

-ott/-ett/-ött
-t
-tt

12.1.1 -tt

The vowelless geminate variant -tt of the past tense suffix only occurs after adding verb stems word-finally and before PERSON/NUMBER suffixes:

lőtt 3SG PAST INDEF
lőtted 3SG PAST DEF 'shoot'

There are only a few verbal v-stems (fő ‘cook’, lő ‘shoot’, nő ‘grow’, nyő ‘wear down’ rő ‘scribble’, sző ‘weave’), all of which end in a vowel in their dictionary forms (i.e. in isolation). See Section 19.2.

12.1.2 -ott/-ett/-ött

If there is a suffix-initial vowel, then the choice of the suffix-initial vowel depends on Vowel Harmony:

fuott ‘run’ 3SG PAST INDEF
nézett ‘look’ 3SG PAST INDEF
főzött ‘cook’ 3SG PAST INDEF

12.1.3 -ott/-ett/-ött vs. -t

The choice between a vowel-initial variant -ott/-ett/-ött vs. the vowelless variant -t depends on what precedes and follows the past suffix.

12.1.3.1 Word-final position

When the past suffix is in word-final position (i.e. in the 3rd person singular indefinite, which is unmarked), the choice between the vowel-initial variant -ott/-ett/-ött vs. the vowelless variant -t is determined by the last sound(s) of the stem to which the past suffix is added.

(i) The vowelless variant (-t) occurs in word-final position if

a. the stem ends in a single consonant which is n, ny, l, r or jly:

kíván ‘desire’
hány ‘vomit’
öl ‘kill’
sír ‘cry’
fúj ‘blow’
foly-ik ‘flow’
past kívánt hányt ölt sírt fújt folyt
3SG INDEF

b. the stem belongs to the T-class of -adi-ed-final verbs:

szalad ‘run’
reped ‘burst’
past 3SG INDEF szaladt repedt

Altogether there are about 110 verb stems that end in -adi-ed. Most of them (over 90 stems) belong to the T-class, and only 17 are Vtt-class -adi-ed stems (see the full list in Section 12.1.3.1. iib below). Members of the latter class take the vowel-initial past suffix in 3SG PAST INDEF: e.g. szened ‘suffer’: szenedett (compare the T-class stems above).

A lot of the -adi-ed stems have variants prefixed with preverbs. Typically, variants are faithful in the sense that all the variants of the same stem belong to the same subclass (T-class or Vtt-class). This is also true of a stem used in different meanings: all senses tend to belong to the same subclass. There are four exceptions: téved, halad, ragad and támad whose different variants/meanings belong to different subclasses:

T-class

halad ‘move, proceed, travel’
ragad ‘stick, get stuck’

Vtt-class

‘exceed, trascend, go beyond’
‘grab, seize, pick up’

as in télhalad, meghalad
12. The Past Tense

 támad  ‘occur (of an idea, thought)’  ‘attack’ (intransitive)
  feltámad: ‘rise from the dead, get up (of a wind)’  (meg)támad + N+ACC  (rá)támad + N+SUBLAT ‘attack N’

téved  ‘move somewhere accidentally’  ‘be wrong/mistaken’
  etéved: ‘lose one’s way’

Examples:

A menet a tér felé haladott.
‘The procession headed towards the square.’
Meghaladott minden régi elképzelést.
‘It transcended all old ideas.’

A papr a kezéhez ragadt.
‘The paper stuck to his hand.’
Hirtelen fúlón ragadott.
‘Suddenly, she grabbed me by the ear.’

Gyakran etévedt,
‘He often lost his way.’
Gyakran tévedett,
‘She was often wrong.’

Feltámad a szél.
‘The wind got up.’
A saját apjára támadott.
‘He attacked his own father+SUBLAT.’
Az ellenség hajnalban támadott.
‘The enemy attacked at dawn.’
Az ellenség megfeltámadott egy hidat.
‘The enemy attacked a bridge+ACC.’

c. the stem ends in the consonant clusters ll or rr:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Past</th>
<th>3SG INDEF</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>áll</td>
<td>szőkell</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘stand’</td>
<td>‘jump’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\[\text{ad} \quad \text{rak} \quad \text{véd} \quad \text{néz} \quad \text{füt} \quad \text{dőf} \]
‘give’  ‘put’  ‘defend’  ‘watch’  ‘heat’  ‘thrust’

\[\text{PAST} \quad \text{adott} \quad \text{rakott} \quad \text{vedett} \quad \text{nézett} \quad \text{fűtt} \quad \text{dőftt} \]
3SG INDEF

\[\text{b. the stem belongs to the VTT-class of -adi-ed-final verbs:}\
\[\text{ad} \quad \text{fogad} \quad \text{szenved} \quad \text{téved} \]
‘give’  ‘receive’  ‘suffer’  ‘be wrong’

\[\text{PAST} \quad \text{adott} \quad \text{fogadott} \quad \text{szenvedett} \quad \text{tévedett} \]
3SG INDEF

\[\text{c. it occurs in the exceptional 3SG PAST INDEF forms fekúd ‘lay’, aludt ‘slept’.}\

\[\text{d. (ii) The vowel-initial variant -otti-etti-ött occurs in word-final position in}\
\text{all the cases not listed in points (ia-id) above, in particular, if}\
\text{a. the stem ends in a single consonant which is NOT n, ny, l, r or j/y:}\
\text{ad} \quad \text{rak} \quad \text{véd} \quad \text{néz} \quad \text{fút} \quad \text{dőf} \]
‘give’  ‘put’  ‘defend’  ‘watch’  ‘heat’  ‘thrust’

\[\text{PAST} \quad \text{adott} \quad \text{rakott} \quad \text{vedett} \quad \text{nézett} \quad \text{fűtt} \quad \text{dőftt} \]
3SG INDEF

\[\text{e. The following is a complete list of the -adi-ed-final verb stems that}\
\text{belong to the Vri-class:}\
\text{ad ‘give’}\
\text{csipked ‘pinch repeatedly’}\
\text{enged ‘allow’}\
\text{fed ‘cover’}\
\text{feled ‘forget’}\
\text{fogad ‘receive’}\
\text{halad ‘move, proceed’}\
\text{tálhalad, meghalad ‘exceed transcend go beyond’}\
\text{lépked ‘step’}\
\text{ragad ‘grab, seize, pick up’}\
\text{repked ‘flutter, hover’}\
\text{sennyed ‘suffer’}\
\text{szed ‘pick’}\
\text{szenved ‘suffer’}\
\text{tagad ‘deny’}\
\text{támad ‘attack’}\
\text{téved ‘be wrong/mistaken’}\
\text{vigad ‘have fun’}\
\text{hallott kellett vallott hullott/hült}\
\]
12. The Past Tense

c. the stem ends in a consonant cluster OTHER THAN ll or rr:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>hajt</th>
<th>sérőt</th>
<th>döönt</th>
<th>vonzt</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PAST</td>
<td>hajott</td>
<td>sérőtt</td>
<td>dööntt</td>
<td>vonzott</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3SG INDEF

12.1.3.2 Non-word-final position preceding a PERSON/NUMBER suffix

When the past suffix precedes a vowel-initial PERSON/NUMBER suffix (i.e. in all person/numbers other than the 3rd person singular indefinite), the choice between the vowel-initial variant -ott-att-ött vs. the vowelless variant -t is determined by the last sound(s) of the stem to which the past suffix is added.

(i) The vowelless variant (-t) occurs preceding the PERSON/NUMBER suffix if

a. the stem ends in a single consonant other than t:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>gőz</th>
<th>hűsőt</th>
<th>tanít</th>
<th>bocsát</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PAST 1SG DEF</td>
<td>gőtt</td>
<td>hűsőtettem</td>
<td>tanítottam</td>
<td>bocsátottam</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(compare adott | loptam | várta | hůzott | vésett | őskött)

3SG INDEF

b. the stem ends in t which is part of the stem-final sequence -at-et:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ápolgat</th>
<th>etet</th>
<th>fagatat</th>
<th>ugotat</th>
<th>matab</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PAST 1SG DEF</td>
<td>ápolgattam</td>
<td>etettam</td>
<td>faggattam</td>
<td>uagattam</td>
<td>matattam</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(compare ápolgattt | etett | faggattt | uagottt | matattt)

Note the monosyllabic verb stems hat ‘influence’ and vet ‘sow’ that end in -at-alt-, BUT take the vowel-initial variant -ott-att-ött of the past suffix before a vowel-initial PERSON/NUMBER suffix: hatottam, vetettam (PAST 1SG DEF).

c. the stem ends in certain consonant clusters. These consonant clusters form a more-or-less arbitrary group, BUT they never end in t (see point ic below). The cluster ng [ŋŋ], and most d-final clusters belong to this group.

12. The Past Tense

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>szorong</th>
<th>leng</th>
<th>mond</th>
<th>fedd</th>
<th>hord</th>
<th>külđ</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PAST 1SG DEF</td>
<td>szorongtam</td>
<td>lengtam</td>
<td>mondtam</td>
<td>feddtem</td>
<td>hordtam</td>
<td>külđtem</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note some cluster-final stems permit both variants of the past suffix before a PERSON/NUMBER suffix:

wold
‘lengthen’

PAST 1SG DEF toldtam toldottam

Note that old ‘solve’ always requires the vowel-initial variant: oldottam (PAST 1SG DEF).

(ii) The vowel-initial variant -ott-att-ött occurs preceding the PERSON/NUMBER suffix if

a. the stem ends in the single consonant t BUT does not end in -at-alt-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>hűsőt</th>
<th>tanít</th>
<th>bocsát</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PAST 1SG DEF</td>
<td>hűsőtettem</td>
<td>tanítottam</td>
<td>bocsátottam</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(tát | fút | fut | köt | süt | köt
‘open wide’ | ‘heat’ | ‘run’ | ‘tie’ | ‘bake’

PAST 1SG DEF tátottam fútottam futottam köttettem süttettem |

Note that there are two exceptional stems which end in t, but not in -at-alt-, and nevertheless take the vowelless variant of the past suffix before a PERSON/NUMBER suffix: lát ‘see’ and alkor ‘create’: láttam, alkoottam (PAST 1SG DEF)

b. the stem ends in certain consonant clusters. These include all the clusters that end in t. The cluster ng [ŋŋ], and most d-final clusters DO NOT belong to this group (see point ic above).

hajt | sérőt | döönt | vonzt | csuklič |
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PAST hajottam</td>
<td>sérőttam</td>
<td>döönttam</td>
<td>vonzottam</td>
<td>csukličtam</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1SG DEF

For the past forms of Vowel-deleting Stems and irregular stems see Sections 19.1, 19.3, 19.4 and 19.5.
12. The Past Tense

12.2 Past Indefinite

The indefinite person/number suffixes in the Past Tense are the following (in the chart below ‘past’ stands for the appropriate variant of the past tense suffix):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PERSON/NUMBER</th>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1ST</td>
<td>past + -am/-em</td>
<td>past + -unk/-ünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2ND</td>
<td>past + -ál/-él</td>
<td>past + -atok/-etek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3RD</td>
<td>past + -e</td>
<td>past + -aki/-ek</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The selection of the appropriate variant of the past suffix (underlined in the table below) has been discussed in Section 12.1 above. The person/number suffixes (emboldened below) are harmonizing two-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

- The selection of the appropriate variant of the past suffix (underlined in the table below) has been discussed in Section 12.1 above. The person/number suffixes (emboldened below) are harmonizing two-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SG</th>
<th>1St adatam</th>
<th>2nd adatál</th>
<th>3rd adatott</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td>1St adatünk</td>
<td>2nd adatok</td>
<td>3rd adatok</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- The selection of the appropriate variant of the past suffix (underlined in the table below) has been discussed in Section 12.1 above. The person/number suffixes (emboldened below) are harmonizing two-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

- The selection of the appropriate variant of the past suffix (underlined in the table below) has been discussed in Section 12.1 above. The person/number suffixes (emboldened below) are harmonizing two-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

12.3 Past Definite

The definite person/number suffixes in the Past Tense are the following (in the chart below ‘past’ stands for the appropriate variant of the past tense suffix):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PERSON/NUMBER</th>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1ST</td>
<td>past + -am/-em</td>
<td>past + -uki/-ük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2ND</td>
<td>past + -ad/-eá</td>
<td>past + -atók/-étok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3RD</td>
<td>past + -al/-e</td>
<td>past + -áki/-ék</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- For the use of the Past Tense, see Chapter 16.
13. The Conditional

The Conditional is marked with the conditional suffix which appears in the TENSE/MOOD slot following the verb stem. The person/number distinctions and the definiteness distinctions are expressed by suffixes in the PERSON/NUMBER slot.

13.1 The conditional suffix

The conditional suffix appears in the TENSE/MOOD inflectional slot, i.e. it follows the stem and precedes the definite or indefinite PERSON/NUMBER suffixes. It has the following variants:

-\(n\)
-\(-an/-en\)

13.1.1 -an/-en

The choice between the back vowel variant -an and the front vowel variant -en of the vowel-initial form of the conditional suffix is determined by Vowel Harmony:

\[
\begin{array}{cccc}
\text{mond} & \text{sért} & \text{küld} \\
\text{'say'} & \text{'offend'} & \text{'send'} \\
\text{COND} & \text{mondana} & \text{sértene} & \text{küldene} \\
3\text{SG INDEF} & \\
\end{array}
\]

13.1.2 -an/-en vs. -n

The choice between the vowel-initial -an/-en variant vs. the vowelless -n variant of the conditional suffix depends on the shape of the stem.

(i) The vowel-initial variant occurs if

a. the stem ends in a consonant cluster other than -rr, -ll:

b. the stem ends in a long vowel:

\[
\begin{array}{cccc}
tânt & \text{veszít} & \text{szít} & \text{bocsát} \\
\text{'teach'} & \text{'lose'} & \text{'stay up'} & \text{'forgive'} \\
\text{COND} & \text{tanítanád} & \text{veszíténéd} & \text{szítanád} & \text{bocsátanád} \\
2\text{SG INDEF} & \\
\end{array}
\]

\[
\begin{array}{cccc}
vét & \text{tát} & \text{hát} & \text{mát} & \text{fút} \\
\text{'cry'} & \text{'open wide'} & \text{'square'} & \text{'operate'} & \text{'heat'} \\
\text{COND} & \text{vétenéd} & \text{tátonád} & \text{hútenéd} & \text{mútenéd} & \text{fútenéd} \\
2\text{SG INDEF} & \\
\end{array}
\]

(ii) The vowelless variant occurs if

a. the stem ends in -rr, -ll:

\[
\begin{array}{cccc}
\text{áll} & \text{szégyell} & \text{vár} \\
\text{'stand'} & \text{'be ashamed of'} & \text{'sew'} \\
\text{COND} & \text{állna} & \text{szégyeline} & \text{várna} \\
3\text{SG INDEF} & \\
\end{array}
\]

Note that hall 'hear', keli 'have to, need', vall 'confess' and hull 'fall' are exceptional because they end in -ll but they take the vowel-initial -an/-en variant of the conditional suffix:

\[
\begin{array}{cccc}
hall & \text{kell} & \text{vall} & \text{hull} \\
\text{COND} & \text{hollana} & \text{kellene} & \text{vollana} & \text{hullana} \\
3\text{SG INDEF} & \\
\end{array}
\]

Compare the regular állna '(s)he/it would stand'. See Section 13.1.2na.
13. The Conditional

b. the stem ends in a single consonant other than t:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>lop</th>
<th>ver</th>
<th>hagv</th>
<th>néz</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'steal'</td>
<td>'beat'</td>
<td>'leave'</td>
<td>'look'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**COND**  
2SG DEF  
lopvénad vervéig hagynéd néznéd

c. the stem ends in a t preceded by a short vowel:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>vet</th>
<th>hat</th>
<th>üt</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'sow'</td>
<td>'influence'</td>
<td>'hit'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**COND**  
2SG DEF  
vétvénad hâtmad ütméd

Note that Vowel-deleting Stems take the -n variant of the conditional suffix: e.g. *moróg* 'growl': *morogna* (s)he/it would growl. Vowel-deleting -ik stems may equally take the -n variant or the -ani-en variant: e.g. *furdik*: *furóneifuróden* (s)he/it would take a bath. See Section 19.1 on Vowel-deleting Stems and Chapter 18 on *ik*-verbs.

13.2 Present Conditional Indefinite

The indefinite PERSON/NUMBER suffixes in the Present Conditional are the following (in the table below ‘COND’ stands for the appropriate variant of the conditional suffix):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ék</td>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ánki-ének</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ádl-éd</td>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -átoki-étek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ái-é</td>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ást-é</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- The selection of the appropriate variant of the conditional suffix (underlined in the table below) has been discussed in Section 13.1 above. Most of the PERSON/NUMBER suffixes (emboldened below) are harmonizing two-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony.
- Note, however, that the 1st person singular suffix -ék does not harmonize and thus remains the same after back and front stems as well.

13.3 Present Conditional Definite

The conditional definite endings are the following in the Present Conditional (in the table below ‘COND’ stands for the appropriate variant of the conditional suffix):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ám-én</td>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ánki-ének</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ádl-éd</td>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -átoki-étek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ái-é</td>
<td><strong>COND</strong> + -ást-é</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- The selection of the appropriate variant of the conditional suffix (underlined in the table below) has been discussed in Section 13.1 above. The NUMBER/PERSON suffixes (emboldened below) are harmonizing two-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate variant is determined by Vowel Harmony.
- Note that the plural 1st person suffixes and the plural 2nd person suffixes are identical in the definite and the indefinite conditional conjugations (-ánki-ének and -átoki-étek respectively).
13. The Conditional

PL 1st adnánk vernének lőknénk mondánánk vétenénk
2ND adnálok vernétek lőknétek mondánaklak vétenétek
3RD adnák vernék lőknék mondának vétenék

Note that sometimes the 3rd person plural definite conditional form may be identical with the 1st person singular indefinite conditional form. In Standard Hungarian this can only happen if the stem is a front stem: Én lőknék egy követ. ‘I would push a stone!’ = Ők lőknék a követ. ‘They would push the stone’. If the stem is back, the two forms are distinct: Én adnék egy ajándékot neki. ‘I would give a present to her/him.’ ≠ Ők adnák az ajándékokat neki. ‘They would give the present to her/him.’ (In non-standard Hungarian, the two forms are identical even for back vowel stems, e.g. adnák. This is considered to be incorrect by purists.)

13.4 1st subject 2nd/pl object: the -álak/-élek form

Similarly to the Present Tense and the Past Tense, if the subject of the verb is 1st person singular and the object is 2nd person singular or plural a special suffix is used. In the Conditional the ending is COND + -ÁLAK/ELEK

The choice of the appropriate -álak/-élek variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

ad ver lők mond vét
‘give’ ‘beat’ ‘push’ ‘say’ ‘buy’

SG 1st adnálak vernélek lőknélek mondánálak vétenélek

13.5 Past Conditional

The Past Conditional is not expressed by suffixation, but by a construction which consists of a (definite or indefinite) past verb form plus the word volna. Schematically:

verb_past + volna

The difference between definiteness and indefiniteness is expressed by the verb form in Past Tense (by using the Past Definite or the Past Indefinite). If the verb form is definite, the whole construction is definite and if it is indefinite, the whole construction is indefinite:

ha láttál volna egy repülőt... ‘if you had seen a plane...’
ha láttad volna a repülőt... ‘if you had seen the plane...’
14. The Conjunctive-Imperative

The Conjunctive-Imperative is marked with the conjunctive-imperative suffix which appears in the TENSE/MOOD slot following the verb stem. The person/number distinctions and the definiteness distinctions are expressed by suffixes in the PERSON/NUMBER slot.

For the sake of simplicity we shall refer to the combination of the conjunctive-imperative suffix plus a person/number suffix as the ‘conjunctive-imperative ending’.

14.1 Conjunctive-Imperative Indefinite

The conjunctive-imperative endings are the following in the indefinite conjugation:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-jaki-jek</td>
<td>-fungk-jünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ak/-ek</td>
<td>-fungk/-jünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-jál/-jél</td>
<td>-játok/-jetek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-áj/-él</td>
<td>-játok/-jetek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-joni-jen-jön</td>
<td>-janok/-jenek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-on/-en/-ön</td>
<td>-janok/-jenek</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the table above (as elsewhere in this book) the symbol [] indicates that the preceding consonant has to be doubled, i.e. the stem-final consonant geminates before the suffix-initial vowel (e.g. hoz[]ak → hozzak [höz:ak] ‘bring’ (1SG CONI INDEF); vés[]etek → vészETEK [vésetek] ‘chisel’ (2PL CONI INDEF)).

- These suffixes are harmonizing two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

14.1.1 Sibilant-final stems

As can be seen in the table above, some variation in the endings is not due to Vowel Harmony. Specifically, all the conjunctive-imperative indefinite endings have variants that cause gemination of the stem-final consonant (in the table above these variants are marked with the special initial symbol []). These variants occur if the stem-final consonant is one of the sibilants sz, z, s, dz.

* Note that the j-initial variants may cause assimilation which is unindicated in the spelling (e.g. adjatok [ajátok]). For the actual pronunciation of the consonant clusters consisting of a consonant+j see Section 1.3.4 on Palatalization.

14.1.2 Short Forms

The second person singular conjunctive-imperative indefinite ending -jál/-jél/-áj/-él has an optional alternative.

This alternative is -j after stems ending in non-sibilant consonants, and - to after stems ending in the sibilants sz, z, s, dz (in other words, the final sibilant consonant of sibilant-final stems becomes geminated). Thus the second person singular conjunctive-imperative indefinite forms have short-form alternatives. Compare:

- 'give' 'beat' 'push' 'bring' 'chisel' 'cook'

2SG LONG adjál verjél lókjél hozzájel vészél főzőjel
SHORT adj verj lókj hozz vész főzz
There is no difference in meaning or usage between the long and short forms. Only the 2nd person singular forms have short alternatives. The same assimilation rules apply to the short forms as to the long forms.

14.2 Conjugative-Imperative Definite

The conjugative-imperative endings are the following in the definite conjugation:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CONJUNCTIVE-IMPERATIVE DEFINITE</th>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>jami/-jem</td>
<td>juki/-jük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>-aml/-em</td>
<td>-aml/-ëm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>jadl/-zed</td>
<td>játokl/-jétæk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>-adl/-ed</td>
<td>-adokl/-adétek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>jal/-je</td>
<td>jál/-jék</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>-al/-e</td>
<td>-al/-ëk</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the table above (as elsewhere in this book) the symbol □ indicates that the preceding consonant has to be doubled, i.e. the stem-final consonant geminates before the suffix-initial vowel (e.g. hoz+□uk → hoz[uk] [hoz:uk] ‘bring’ (1Pl. CONJ DEF); vész+□étek → vészétek [vész:étek] ‘chisel’ (2Pl. CONJ DEF)).

- These suffixes are harmonizing two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ad} & \quad \text{ver} & \quad \text{lök} & \quad \text{hoz} & \quad \text{vész} & \quad \text{főz} \\
‘give’ & \quad ‘beat’ & \quad ‘push’ & \quad ‘bring’ & \quad ‘chisel’ & \quad ‘cook’ \\
\text{SG 1st} & \quad \text{adjam} & \quad \text{verjém} & \quad \text{lökjem} & \quad \text{hozzam} & \quad \text{véssem} & \quad \text{főzzem} \\
\text{2nd} & \quad \text{adjad} & \quad \text{verjed} & \quad \text{lökjad} & \quad \text{hozzad} & \quad \text{véssed} & \quad \text{főzzed} \\
\text{3rd} & \quad \text{adjá} & \quad \text{verje} & \quad \text{lökje} & \quad \text{hozza} & \quad \text{vésse} & \quad \text{főzse} \\
\text{PL 1st} & \quad \text{adjuk} & \quad \text{verjük} & \quad \text{lökjük} & \quad \text{hozzuk} & \quad \text{véssük} & \quad \text{főzzük} \\
\text{2nd} & \quad \text{adjátok} & \quad \text{verjétek} & \quad \text{lökjétek} & \quad \text{hozzátok} & \quad \text{véssétek} & \quad \text{főzzétek} \\
\text{3rd} & \quad \text{adják} & \quad \text{verjék} & \quad \text{lökjék} & \quad \text{hozzák} & \quad \text{véssék} & \quad \text{főzzék}
\end{align*}
\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]

\[\Rightarrow\]
### 14. The Conjunctive-Imperative

The correspondences are as follows. Abbreviations: BN: non-sibilant-final back stem (ad ‘give’); BS: sibilant-final back stem (hosz ‘bring’); FN: non-sibilant-final front stem (ver ‘beat’); FS: sibilant-final front stem (vész ‘chisel’).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present Definite</th>
<th>Conjunctive-Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1PL BN adjuk</td>
<td>adjuk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BS hozzuk</td>
<td>hozzuk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FN verjük</td>
<td>verjük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FS vészük</td>
<td>vészük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL BN adjátok</td>
<td>adjátok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BS hozzátok</td>
<td>hozzátok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FN veritek</td>
<td>veriték</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FS vésitek</td>
<td>vésiték</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL BN adják</td>
<td>adják</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BS hozzák</td>
<td>hozzák</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FN verik</td>
<td>verjék</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FS vészik</td>
<td>vészék</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG BN adja</td>
<td>adja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BS hozza</td>
<td>hozza</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FN veri</td>
<td>verje</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FS vési</td>
<td>vésse</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NB: t-final stems do not have these coincidences in Standard Hungarian (see Section 14.3.4).

### 14.3 t-final Verbs

The Conjunctive-Imperative of t-final verbs differs from that of the other verbs both in the definite and the indefinite.

T-final verbs behave in three different ways depending on the kinds of vowel-consonant sequences or consonant-consonant clusters they end in.

#### 14.3.1 t-final stems that end in a short vowel plus t

Verb stems in the first subclass of t-final verbs end in a short vowel + t and (exceptionally) also the verbs lát ‘see’, lát(-fut) ‘run a lot, never stop’ and bocsát ‘forgive’. These verb stems take special s-initial conjunctive-imperative (definite or indefinite) endings.

The s-initial endings are the following in the Conjunctive-Imperative Indefinite and the Conjunctive-Imperative Definite:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Conjunctive-Imperative Indefinite</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt; -sád/-sek</td>
<td>-sunk/-sünk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt; -sád/-sél</td>
<td>-sátok/-setek</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt; -son/-sent-sön</td>
<td>-sanak/-senek</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Conjunctive-Imperative Definite</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt; -sam/-sem</td>
<td>-suki/-sük</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt; -sad/-sed</td>
<td>-sátok/-sétek</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt; -sal/-se</td>
<td>-sáki/-sék</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

When these endings are added to the verbs in this subclass, the stem-final t also becomes s, so a geminate ss [ʃʃ] appears in the conjunctive-imperative forms: t + s → ss. This change is indicated in the spelling: lát + sák → lássák [lafːak] ‘see 3PL. CONJ DEF’.

- These suffixes are harmonizing two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony.

### Conjunctive-Imperative Indefinite

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>alkot 'create'</th>
<th>fizet 'pay'</th>
<th>üt 'hit'</th>
<th>lát 'see'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sg 1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt; alkossak</td>
<td>fizessék</td>
<td>üssék</td>
<td>lássák</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt; alkossál</td>
<td>fizessél</td>
<td>üssél</td>
<td>lássál</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt; alkossan</td>
<td>fizessen</td>
<td>üssön</td>
<td>lásson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl 1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt; alkossunk</td>
<td>fizessünk</td>
<td>üssünk</td>
<td>lássunk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt; alkossatok</td>
<td>fizessetek</td>
<td>üsetek</td>
<td>lássatok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt; alkossanak</td>
<td>fizessenek</td>
<td>üssenek</td>
<td>lássanak</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### 14. The Conjunctive-Imperative

#### 14.3.1.1 Short Forms

(i) The **indefinite** 2sg short forms are formed with the suffix -s which behaves in the same way as the corresponding suffix in the long form: \( t + s \rightarrow ss \).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>alkot</th>
<th>fizet</th>
<th>üt</th>
<th>lát</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'create'</td>
<td>'pay'</td>
<td>'hit'</td>
<td>'see'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2SG LONG</th>
<th>alkossál</th>
<th>fízessél</th>
<th>üssél</th>
<th>lassál</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2SG SHORT</td>
<td>alkoss</td>
<td>fízes</td>
<td>üs</td>
<td>lass</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(ii) The **definite** 2sg short forms are formed with the suffix -d. Note that the stem-final \( t \) changes to \( s \) before this suffix too: \( t + d \rightarrow sd \).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>alkot</th>
<th>fizet</th>
<th>üt</th>
<th>lát</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'create'</td>
<td>'pay'</td>
<td>'hit'</td>
<td>'see'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2SG LONG</th>
<th>alkossad</th>
<th>fízesed</th>
<th>üssed</th>
<th>lassad</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2SG SHORT</td>
<td>alkoss</td>
<td>fízes</td>
<td>üs</td>
<td>lass</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 14.3.2 t-final stems that end in a long vowel plus \( t \), or a \( t \) preceded by a consonant other than \( s \), \( sz \)

Verb stems in the second subclass of \( t \)-final verbs end in a long vowel + \( t \) or in a consonant cluster whose first consonant is not \( s \) or \( sz \).

The verbs füti 'heat', hüt 'cool', múti 'operate', szüti 'stir up', tát 'open wide', vét 'err' and the verbs ending in the suffix -ít belong here, but note that a few verbs are exceptional in that they end in a long vowel plus \( t \) but belong to the first subclass of \( r \)-final verbs (see Section 14.3.1).

The verb stems of the second subclass take the same \( s \)-initial conjunctive-imperative (definite or indefinite) endings as those of the first subclass (for the list of endings see Section 14.3.1). However, when these endings are added to the \( r \)-final stems of the second subclass, \( rs \) clusters result (i.e. the stem-final \( t \) does NOT become \( s \): \( t + s \rightarrow rs \)). The \( ts \) cluster is pronounced \([tj] \) or \([tf] \), an assimilation which is not indicated by the spelling. A short \([tj] \) is pronounced when the \( ts \) cluster is preceded by another consonant (\( tart + suk \rightarrow tartsuk \) [\( tars\text{f}uk \) 'hold 2PL CONJ DEF']) and a long \([tf] \) is pronounced when the \( ts \) cluster is preceded by a vowel (\( tát + sák \rightarrow tásák \) [\( tars\text{f}ak \) 'open wide 3PL CONJ DEF']).

- The suffix variants are harmonizing two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

#### Conjugative-Imperative Indefinite

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ront</th>
<th>sért</th>
<th>önt</th>
<th>tát</th>
<th>vét</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'spoil'</td>
<td>'hurt'</td>
<td>'pour'</td>
<td>'open wide'</td>
<td>'miss'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1SG</th>
<th>rontsak</th>
<th>sértsék</th>
<th>öntsék</th>
<th>tásak</th>
<th>vétsek</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2SG</td>
<td>rontsál</td>
<td>sértsél</td>
<td>öntsél</td>
<td>tásál</td>
<td>vésél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td>rontsan</td>
<td>sértsen</td>
<td>öntsén</td>
<td>tásan</td>
<td>vésen</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1PL</th>
<th>rontsunk</th>
<th>sértsünk</th>
<th>öntsünk</th>
<th>tásunk</th>
<th>vésünk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2PL</td>
<td>rontsátok</td>
<td>sérsetek</td>
<td>öntsetek</td>
<td>tásátok</td>
<td>véssetek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL</td>
<td>rontsanak</td>
<td>sérsgenek</td>
<td>öntsengenek</td>
<td>tásanak</td>
<td>vésengenek</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Conjugative-Imperative Definite

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ront</th>
<th>sért</th>
<th>önt</th>
<th>tát</th>
<th>vét</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'spoil'</td>
<td>'hurt'</td>
<td>'pour'</td>
<td>'open wide'</td>
<td>'miss'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1SG</th>
<th>rontsam</th>
<th>sértsém</th>
<th>öntsém</th>
<th>tásam</th>
<th>vétsem</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2SG</td>
<td>rontsad</td>
<td>sértsed</td>
<td>öntsed</td>
<td>tásad</td>
<td>vésed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td>rontsa</td>
<td>sérts</td>
<td>önts</td>
<td>tás</td>
<td>véts</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1PL</th>
<th>rontsuk</th>
<th>sértsük</th>
<th>öntsük</th>
<th>tásuk</th>
<th>vésük</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2PL</td>
<td>rontsátok</td>
<td>sérsetek</td>
<td>öntsetek</td>
<td>tásátok</td>
<td>véssetek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL</td>
<td>rontsák</td>
<td>sérsgék</td>
<td>öntsék</td>
<td>tásák</td>
<td>vétsék</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
14. The Conjugative-Imperative

14.3.2.1 Short Forms
(i) The indefinite 2SG short forms are formed with the suffix -s which behaves in the same way as the corresponding suffix in the long form: \( t + s \rightarrow ts. \)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Short</th>
<th>Long</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>ront</td>
<td>rontsals</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>sért</td>
<td>sértsél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>önt</td>
<td>öntsél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4th</td>
<td>tár</td>
<td>tásásal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5th</td>
<td>vét</td>
<td>végtsél</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(ii) The definite 2SG short forms are formed with the suffix -sd; \( t + sd \rightarrow tsd. \) The resulting tsd cluster is always pronounced [dʒd]:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Short</th>
<th>Long</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>ront</td>
<td>rontsad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>sért</td>
<td>sértséd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>önt</td>
<td>öntsédd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4th</td>
<td>tár</td>
<td>tásasad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5th</td>
<td>vét</td>
<td>végtséd</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

14.3.3 St or szt-final verbs

Verb stems take the \( \square \)-initial conjunctive-imperative (definite or indefinite) endings (see Sections 14.1 and 14.2). However, the verb stems delete the verb-final \( t \) when the conjunctive-imperative ending is added and thus the preceding \( s \) or \( sz \) is geminated: \( st + \square \rightarrow ss \) (fesszünk → fessünk 'paint 2PL CONJ INDEF') or \( szt + \square \rightarrow szz \) (oszt + \( \square \) unk → osszunk 'divide' 2PL CONJ INDEF').

- The suffix variants are harmonizing two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Short</th>
<th>Long</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>oszt</td>
<td>ijeszt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>jesszék</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>fest</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>fesszék</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

14.3.3.1 Short Forms
(i) The indefinite 2SG short forms are formed with the suffix -\( \square \) which behaves in the same way as the corresponding suffix in the long form: \( st + \square \rightarrow ss; szt + \square \rightarrow szz. \)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Short</th>
<th>Long</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>oszt</td>
<td>ijeszt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>jesszék</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>fest</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>fesszék</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(ii) The definite 2SG short forms are formed with the suffix -d. Note that the stem-final \( t \) deletes before this suffix too: \( st + d \rightarrow sd; szt + d \rightarrow szd. \)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Short</th>
<th>Long</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>oszt</td>
<td>ijeszt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>jesszék</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>fest</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>fesszék</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

14.3.4

In Standard Hungarian the conjunctive-imperative definite verb form of a t-final stem is never identical with the present definite verb form of the
The choice of the appropriate -jalak/-jelak vs. -jelek/-jelek variant is determined by Vowel Harmony.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present Definite</th>
<th>Conjunctive-Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1PL</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>látjuk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ranjuk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ossjuk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fessjuk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>látjátok</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ronjának</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ossjátok</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>látjak</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ronjájak</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ossják</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3SG</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>látja</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ronjja</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ossjia</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In non-standard Hungarian, some conjunctive-imperative definite verb forms may be identical with some present definite verb forms even for t-final stems. Notably, the conjunctive-imperative forms above are used in the Present Definite by some native speakers of non-standard Hungarian. This is considered to be incorrect by purists.

### 14.4 1sg subject 2sg/pl object: the -jalaki/-jelek/-jelak/-jelek form

Similarly to the Present Tense, the Past Tense and the Conditional, if the subject of the verb is 1st person singular and the object is 2nd person singular or plural, a special ending is used in the Conjunctive-Imperative as well.

In the Conjunctive-Imperative, the ending is -jalaki/-jelek/-jelak/-jelek where □ means the doubling of the stem final consonant if the consonant is one of the sibilants sz, z, s, dz.
15. The Future

15.1 The Future Construction

There is no specific future suffix in Hungarian. There is however a construction which refers to future time. The construction consists of the verb fog + INFINITIVE. Fog takes the definite or indefinite present endings and the infinitive is always of the impersonal kind (i.e. not an infinitive with possessive endings, see Chapter 17). Fog may precede or follow the Infinitive (its actual position is determined by emphasis and other factors): Aludni fogok. Fogok aludni. ‘I will sleep.’ In the following examples the Future Construction is illustrated with the verb olvasni ‘read’.

### Future Indefinite

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
<th>Pl.</th>
<th>1sg, 2sg, pl.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td>olvasni fogok</td>
<td>olvasni fogsz</td>
<td>olvasni fog</td>
<td>olvasni fogunk</td>
<td>olvasni foglak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>fogok olvasni</td>
<td>fogsz olvasni</td>
<td>fog olvasni</td>
<td>fogunk olvasni</td>
<td>foglak olvasni</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Future Definite

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
<th>Pl.</th>
<th>2nd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td>olvasni fogom</td>
<td>olvasni fogod</td>
<td>olvasni fogja</td>
<td>olvasni fogjuk</td>
<td>olvasni fogják</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>fogom olvasni</td>
<td>fogod olvasni</td>
<td>fogja olvasni</td>
<td>fogjuk olvasni</td>
<td>fogják olvasni</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that the Future Construction is not the only way to express future time: the Present Tense may be used with future reference too (see Chapter 16).
16. Usage: Tenses, Conditional, Conjunctive-Imperative

16.1 Tenses
There is no equivalent of the English perfect and continuous tenses/moods which is expressed with a conjugated verb form in Hungarian (verbal prefixes may express perfective meaning, see Section 21.2).

- The Present Tense may refer to present or future time:

  * Megyek a könyvtárba.
    * I am going to the library.'

  * Holnap megyek a könyvtárba.
    * Tomorrow I will go to the library.'

  * Nézem a tévét.
    * I am watching television.'

  * Majd nézem a tévét.
    * Later I will watch television.'

- The Past Tense can refer to any action or state that took place in the past. It can be translated into English with Simple Past, Past Continuous, Past Perfect and Past Perfect Continuous:

  * Tegnap olvastam egy könyvet.
    * I read a book yesterday.'

  * Éppen egy könyvet olvasott.
    * He/she/it was reading a book.'

  * Amikor beszélem vele, már olvasta a könyvet.
    * He had already read the book when I talked to him.'

- Note that the English Present Perfect corresponds to the Hungarian Past Tense if the meaning is resultative or indefinite past, but to the Present Tense if the meaning is the 'up-to-the-present' type:

  * Láttam a filmet.
    * 'I have seen the film.'

  * Ledobta a könyvet a földre.
    * 'He/she/it has thrown the book on the floor.'

  * 1968 óta itt laknok.
    * 'They have lived here since 1968.'

  * Mióta vagy rendőr?
    * 'How long have you been a policeman?'

- The Present Tense may refer to the present or the future. Thus, future time may be expressed in two ways: with the Present Tense, and with the Future Construction:

  * Kimegy az állomásra.
    * 'He/she/it will go to the railway station.'

  * Ki fog menni az állomásra.
    * 'He/she/it will go to the railway station.'

- There is no sequence of tenses rule in Hungarian, so dependent clauses may be in any tense (including the Future) even if the main clause is in the past:

  * Azt monda, hogy Mari elmegy.
    * 'He/she/it said that Mary had left.'

  * Azt monda, hogy Mari elmegy.
    * 'He/she/it said that Mary was leaving/would leave.'

  * Azt monda, hogy Mari el fog menni.
    * 'He/she/it said that Mary would leave.'

16.2 Conditional
- The conditional is used in ha ... (akkor) 'if... then' conditional constructions:

  Of the three conditional constructions TYPE 1 ('If I find Christopher, we'll go to the cinema') is expressed with the Present or the Future in Hungarian. Both the Present and the Future may appear in either (and both) of the two clauses:

  * Ha megtalálom Kristófot, (akkor) elmegyünk mosiba.
    * 'If I find Christopher, we'll go to the cinema.'
16. Usage: Tenses, Conditional, Conjunctive-Imperative

Ha meg fogom találni Kristófot, (akkor) elmeggünk moziba.
‘If I find Christopher, we’ll go to the cinema.’

Ha meg fogom találni Kristófot, (akkor) el fogunk menni moziba.
‘If I find Christopher, we’ll go to the cinema.’

Ha meg találjom Kristófot, (akkor) el fogunk menni moziba.
‘If I find Christopher, we’ll go to the cinema.’

Conditional construction type 2 (‘If I found Christopher, we would go to the cinema’) is expressed with the Present Conditional in both clauses:

Ha meg találhánám Kristófot, (akkor) elmentünk moziba.
‘If I found Christopher, we’d go to the cinema.’

Jó lenne, ha többet látanám.
‘It would be nice if I saw her/him/it more.’

Conditional construction type 3 (‘If I had found Christopher, we would have gone to the cinema’) is expressed with the Past Conditional in both clauses:

Ha meg találtam volna Kristófot, (akkor) elmentünk volna moziba.
‘If I had found Christopher, we would have gone to the cinema.’

Jó lett volna, ha többet láttam volna.
‘It would have been nice if I had seen her/him/it more.’

• The Present Conditional is used in polite requests:

  Adnál egy pohár vízet?
  ‘Would you give me a glass of water?’

• The conditional is used to express wishes:

  Bárcsak lenne időm.
  ‘If only I had time.’

  Bárcsak lett volna időm.
  ‘If only I had had time.’

16.3 Conjunctive-Imperative

• The Conjunctive-Imperative is used in direct and indirect commands/requests:

  Nézz ki az ablakon!
  ‘Look out of the window!’

  Gyere ide!
  ‘Come here!’

  Ne menjünk aludni!
  ‘Let’s not go to sleep!’

  Azt mondtad, hogy (én) nézzük ki az ablakon.
  ‘You told me to look out of the window.’

  Júlia azt kéri, hogy jöjjek ide.
  ‘Julia asks me to come here.’

  Azt javasolta, hogy ne menjünk aludni.
  ‘He/she/it suggested that we should not go to sleep.’

• The Conjunctive-Imperative is used to express actions/statements that somebody commands, requests, or wants somebody to do. In these constructions the Conjunctive-Imperative appears in the subordinate clause.

  Azt akarom, hogy veggę le.
  ‘I want you to take it off.’

  Csak azt szeretnéd, hogy szeressen.
  ‘You would like him/her/it to love you.’

  Azt parancsolta, hogy ne gondolkozzam.
  ‘She/he/it ordered me not to think.’

• The Conjunctive-Imperative is used to ask for instructions/suggestions/permission etc. (i.e. it can be used in the meaning expressed in English by Shall I?, Shall we?, Should I?, Should we?)

  Levágassam a hajom?
  ‘Shall I have my hair cut?’

  Hová tegyük le?
  ‘Where shall we put it down?’

  Ne zárjám be az ajtón?
  ‘Shall I lock the door?’

1 Negative Yes-No questions of this kind mean the same as, but are more polite than their positive counterparts: Zárjám be az ajtón? ‘Shall I lock the door?’
17. Non-finite forms

17.1 Infinitives

Infinitives are used in special constructions with auxiliary-like verbs and nominals (see Section 23.5 for infinitival constructions):

\[ \text{János utál teniszni.} \quad \text{‘John hates to play tennis.’} \]
\[ (Té) kénytelen vagy teniszni. \quad \text{‘You have no choice but play tennis.’} \]
\[ \text{Nekem jó teniszni.} \quad \text{‘It is good for me to play tennis.’} \]

There are two kinds of infinitives: the ‘impersonal’ infinitive and the ‘personal’ infinitive.

17.1.1 The Impersonal Infinitive

The ‘impersonal’ infinitive is formed with the help of a suffix -ni/-ani/-eni, which is added to the bare verb stem. The choice between the vowel-initial variants -ani vs. -eni is determined by Vowel Harmony. The choice between the vowel-initial -ani/-eni vs. the vowelless -ni variants depends on the end of the stem.

(i) The vowel-initial variants occur if

a. the stem ends in consonant clusters except -rr, -ll:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tart</th>
<th>Tölt</th>
<th>Vonz</th>
<th>Csúklik</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>tartani</td>
<td>töleni</td>
<td>vonzani</td>
<td>csúklani</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that hall ‘hear’, kell ‘have to, need’, vall ‘confess’ and hull ‘fall’ are exceptional because they end in -ll but they take the vowel-initial -ani/-eni variant of the infinitive:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hall</th>
<th>Kell</th>
<th>Vall</th>
<th>Hull</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hallani</td>
<td>kelleni</td>
<td>valani</td>
<td>hullani</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(compare állni ‘to stand’, szégyellni ‘to be ashamed of’)
17. Non-finite forms

b. the stem ends in a long vowel plus t:

- The stems lát ‘see’ and lót(fut) ‘run a lot, never stop’ are exceptional because they end in a long vowel plus t but take the -ni variant of the infinitive suffix:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>lát</th>
<th>lót-fut</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>INFinitive</td>
<td>lát+ni</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(ii) The consonant-initial variants occur in all cases not covered by (i) above:

- The infinitive of a Czák stem is based on its alternative stem: vérzésk 'fight', vérzékedni 'to fight', see Section 19.4.1.1.


17.1.2 The Personal Infinitive: Infinitive with Possessive Suffixes

The Infinitive can receive the nominal possessive endings. As opposed to the impersonal infinitive, the endings of this ‘personal’ infinitive clearly indicate the subject of the verb in infinitive form even if there is no overt subject:

- personal infinitive

Nekem olvasnom kell. ‘I must read.’ (overt subject)
Olvasnom kell. ‘I must read.’ (no overt subject)

The personal infinitival endings (which consist of the infinitive suffix plus a possessive suffix) are the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PERSONAL INFinitive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SINGULAR</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

These suffixes are harmonizing two- or three-form suffixes where the choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ad</th>
<th>mond</th>
<th>néz</th>
<th>fest</th>
<th>lök</th>
<th>küzd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>sg</td>
<td>'give'</td>
<td>'say'</td>
<td>'look'</td>
<td>'paint'</td>
<td>'kill'</td>
<td>'struggle'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>adnom</td>
<td>mondanom</td>
<td>néznem</td>
<td>festenem</td>
<td>lökönem</td>
<td>küzdenem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>adnod</td>
<td>mondanod</td>
<td>nénzed</td>
<td>festened</td>
<td>lönönét</td>
<td>küzdened</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>adnia</td>
<td>mondania</td>
<td>néznie</td>
<td>festenie</td>
<td>lönkie</td>
<td>küzdenie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pl</td>
<td>1st</td>
<td>adnunk</td>
<td>mondununk</td>
<td>néznëk</td>
<td>festenëk</td>
<td>lönknëk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>adnotok</td>
<td>mondanotok</td>
<td>néznetek</td>
<td>festenetek</td>
<td>lönknötk</td>
<td>küzdenetek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>adnuniuk</td>
<td>mondanuiki</td>
<td>néznütek</td>
<td>festenütk</td>
<td>lönknütk</td>
<td>küzdenütk</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The choice between the vowel-initial and consonant-initial variants is determined by the same factors as in the case of the impersonal infinitive suffix -ami-eni vs -ni discussed in 17.1.1 above: if the impersonal infinitive ending after a verb stem is vowel-initial, then the personal infinitive endings after the same verb stem are vowel-initial too.

17. Non-finite forms

issik 'drink', van 'be', megy 'go', jön 'come' are based on the stems ten-, ven-, hin-, vin-, len-, en-, in-, len-, men-, jön- respectively: tennem, vennem, hinnem, vinnem, lennem, ennem, innem, lennem, memem. jönnőt. etc. (see Section 19.5)

The personal infinitive of a Cszik stem is based on its alternative stem: vernesik 'fight', veresedned 'for you to fight', see Section 19.4.1.1.

17.2 Participles

The active (present) participle, the passive (past) participle and the future participle are used in adjectival function:

- a haragvő ember 'the angry man'
- tanult barátom 'my learned friend'
- az elvégzendő munka 'the job to be done'

17.2.1 The Active (Present) Participle

The active participle is formed with the harmonizing two-form suffix -ül-ő, which is added to the bare verb stem. The choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony:

aktiv participle: álló, vészô, küzdô, lôvô, morogô

The active participle of a Cszik stem is based on its alternative stem: vernesik 'fight', veresednô 'fighting', see Section 19.4.3.

The behaviour of széjv and szélv Stems (19.4.3) and the irregular stems (19.5.1.5 and 19.5.2.5) before the active (present) participle suffix: haragzik 'be angry with sb' - haragvô 'angry', jön 'come' - jövô 'coming', etc.

17.2.2 The Passive (Past) Participle

The passive (past) participle suffix is the same as the past tense suffix: -ott-ett-ött-ett. The rules for the selection of variants are essentially identical with those of the past tense suffix variants (see 12.1). Thus the 3sg past indef form of a verb is regularly identical with its past participle:

17.2.3 The Future Participle

The future participle suffix is formed with the harmonising two-form suffix -andói-endô. The choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony. This suffix is practically extinct as a productive form of suffixation in present day colloquial Hungarian (especially the spoken language) and only survives in forms which have become lexicalised ('frozen') adjectives or nouns: jövendi 'future', keleendi 'easy to sell', etc. Typically, relative clauses are used to express meanings which could be expressed by the future participle: e.g. a megirândô cikk 'the paper to be written' = a cikk, amit meg kell írni 'the paper that will have to be written'.

17.2.4 The Adverbial Participle

The adverbial participle is formed with the harmonising two-form suffix -val-ve, which is added to the bare verb stem. The choice of the appropriate harmonic variant is determined by Vowel Harmony: zokog 'cry'; zokogva; never 'laugh': neverve. It is used as an adverb of manner:

Zokogva olvastam a levelét. 'I read her letter crying.'
18. -ik Verbs

-ik verbs are an idiosyncratic class of verbs. They can be identified by the non-harmonizing -ik suffix they take instead of the usual -i in the 3rd person singular Present Indefinite e.g. fázik 'he/she/it is cold', esik 'he/she/it falls', szökik 'she/he/it escapes', álmodik 'he/she/it dreams' (compare the 3SG PRES INDEF of non-ik verbs, e.g. as 'she/he/it digs', marad 'she/he/it stays').

-ik verbs are often intransitive (i.e. have no object) and/or have a subject which is not an agent (i.e. not a doer of an action), but it is not possible to identify members of the -ik class on the basis of their intransitivity/meaning because there are transitive and/or 'agentive' -ik verbs too and there are intransitive and/or 'non-agentive' non-ik verbs as well: compare the 'agentive' játszik 'play' and olvas 'read', and the intransitive megdöglik 'die (of animals)' and meghal 'die'.

There used to be a separate -ik verb conjugation in all the singular persons in the Present Indefinite, the Conditional Indefinite and the Imperative-Conjunctive Indefinite. In present-day standard Hungarian all the special -ik conjugation forms have disappeared (or exist as old-fashioned alternatives to the regular forms) except the 1st person singular and the 3rd person singular Present Indefinite forms. In the 1st person singular Present Indefinite the definite suffix -omb-em-böm is used (though the regular indefinite -oki-eki-ik can be used as well) and in the 3rd person singular indefinite the suffix is -ik instead of zero:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present Indefinite</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>fázik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'be cold'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>So 1st</th>
<th>fúzom</th>
<th>esem</th>
<th>szökm</th>
<th>álmodom</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>fázok</td>
<td>esek</td>
<td>szökik</td>
<td>álmodok</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that some speakers consider the alternative (regular) 1st person forms inappropriate for some -ik verbs (e.g. eszek 'I eat', iszek 'I drink', etc.). Some -ik verbs, however, have no special -omb-em-böm variant forms in the first person singular, so the -oki-eki-ik form is used by all speakers, e.g. hullik 'fall', bomlik 'toosen', bujik 'hide', válík 'become', megélik 'appear'.

For the behaviour of Vowel-deleting Stems of the -ik type see Sections 19.1.1 and 19.1.2.

The following is a list of some common -ik verbs:
(Some of the verb stems listed have variants with pre-verbs (cf. Chapter 21) which may have different meanings. Only the stems are listed here – the variants are also -ik-verbs).

| alapszik | 'be based on' | folyik | 'flow' |
| aluskzik | 'bargain' | fuldklik | 'suffocate' |
| alszik | 'sleep' | fártik | 'bathe' |
| arányik | 'be in proportion to sg' | gyulik | 'gather' |
| áramlik | 'flow' | hájzik | 'foam' |
| ázik | 'be drenched' | halálik | 'bend' |
| bánik | 'treat' | halászik | 'fish' |
| baszik | 'fuck' | halódik | 'be dying' |
| bizik | 'trust' | hallatszik | 'can be heard' |
| bomlik | 'unfold' | hámlik | 'peel' |
| botzik | 'trip' | hangzik | 'sound' |
| búzik | 'hide' | hangváltik | 'decline' |
| buzik | 'dive' | haragszik | 'be angry' |
| büzik | 'stink' | havazik | 'snow' |
| csókolódzik | 'kiss' | hazudik | 'lie, be untrue' |
| csüklik | 'hiccup' | hawayzik | 'be missing' |
| csützik | 'slide' | hízik | 'put on weight' |
| döglik | 'die' | horgászik | 'angle' |
| dolhányszik | 'smoke' | hullámszik | 'wave' |
| emlékszik | 'remember' | iltik | 'suit' |
| érik | 'ripen' | izzik | 'drink' |
| esik | 'fall' | ízik | 'find sg tasty' |
| esküszik | 'speak' | ízik | 'glow' |
| eszik | 'eat' | játszik | 'play' |
| fázik | 'be cold' | késik | 'be late' |
| fekszik | 'lie, recline' | kopik | 'become worn' |
| fénylik | 'shine' | kotlik | 'broad' |
| füglik | 'fart' | kotórszik | 'tumble' |
| fogzik | 'teetle' | kúszik | 'crawli' |
18. -ik Verbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Lakik</th>
<th>'reside'</th>
<th>Szopik</th>
<th>'suck'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tátszik</td>
<td>'seem'</td>
<td>Születik</td>
<td>'be born'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lélegzik</td>
<td>'breathe'</td>
<td>Színik</td>
<td>'cease'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mázik</td>
<td>'crawl'</td>
<td>Telik</td>
<td>'pass'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Morajlik</td>
<td>'rumble'</td>
<td>Tetszik</td>
<td>'like'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mosdik</td>
<td>'wash oneself'</td>
<td>Tojik</td>
<td>'lay eggs'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Málik</td>
<td>'pass, depend on'</td>
<td>Törrik</td>
<td>'break'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nylik</td>
<td>'open'</td>
<td>Tornászik</td>
<td>'do gymnastics'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nyugszik</td>
<td>'be calm'</td>
<td>Történik</td>
<td>'happen'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nyúlik</td>
<td>'stretch'</td>
<td>Tűnik</td>
<td>'seem'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Omlik</td>
<td>'fall down'</td>
<td>Ugrik</td>
<td>'jump'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ómlik</td>
<td>'split'</td>
<td>Úszik</td>
<td>'swim'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oszlik</td>
<td>'disperse'</td>
<td>Utazik</td>
<td>'travel'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Öszödlik</td>
<td>'flock'</td>
<td>Vadászik</td>
<td>'hunt'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parázslik</td>
<td>'glow'</td>
<td>Vágyik</td>
<td>'desire'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pázsik</td>
<td>'copulate'</td>
<td>Vakaródszik</td>
<td>'scratch'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Patazlik</td>
<td>'gush'</td>
<td>Válík</td>
<td>'become, divorce'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pálálik</td>
<td>'be inherent in'</td>
<td>Vásik</td>
<td>'become blind'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rohangázik</td>
<td>'run up and down'</td>
<td>Vedlik</td>
<td>'slough'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ronlik</td>
<td>'become worse'</td>
<td>Vérzik</td>
<td>'bleed'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Siklik</td>
<td>'slide'</td>
<td>Villámlik</td>
<td>'strike (of a lightning)'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Szarik</td>
<td>'defecate'</td>
<td>Virágzik</td>
<td>'flower'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Származik</td>
<td>'originate from'</td>
<td>Vonaglik</td>
<td>'writhe'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Szikik</td>
<td>'escape'</td>
<td>Zajlik</td>
<td>'happen'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Szomjazik</td>
<td>'be thirsty'</td>
<td>Züllik</td>
<td>'become depraved'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

19. Verb Stems

Hungarian stems typically do not change when suffixes are added to them. Regular exceptions to this generalisation result from the sound rules discussed in Chapter 1: Regressive Voice Assimilation (Section 1.3.1), Degemination (Section 1.3.2), Affrication (Section 1.3.3), Palatalization (Section 1.3.4), Nasal Place Assimilation (Section 1.3.5), and Final a, e Lengthening (Section 1.5). These are regular in the sense that they automatically and exceptionally apply to the last sound of every stem that comes under the purview of any of these rules. Regressive Voice Assimilation, Degemination, Affrication, Palatalization and Nasal Place Assimilation are not indicated by the spelling, but Final a, e Lengthening is.

There are, however, some irregular stem types, which do change when suffixes are added to them, cause unusual changes in the suffixes, or have some other unpredictable properties. The verbal ones are discussed in this chapter (for the nominal ones, see Chapter 4).

Note that there are no verbal Lowering Stems (no verbal stems comparable to the ones discussed in Section 4.1).

19.1 Vowel-deleting Stems

These stems all end in a vowel followed by a single consonant. The vowel preceding the stem-final consonant is regularly ole/ő (there is one exceptional verb stem: óriz 'guard').

In Vowel-deleting Stems the vowel preceding the stem-final consonant is unstable: it deletes if the suffix attached to the stem begins with a vowel.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C-initial suffix</th>
<th>V-initial suffix</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sodor</td>
<td>Sodajja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seper</td>
<td>Seperted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Győðr 'torture'</td>
<td>Győðörnék</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
19. Verb Stems

19.1.1 The Past Forms of Vowel-deleting Stems

19.1.1.1 Word-final Position

After Vowel-deleting Stems, in word-final position (i.e., in the 3rd person singular indefinite, which is unmarked), the past suffix appears as

(i) the vowelless variant -t if the stem is a non-ik Vowel-deleting Stem which ends in l or r. In this case the unstable vowel of the stem does not delete since the suffix is consonant-initial:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{rabol} & \quad \text{gyötör} \\
\text{‘rob’} & \quad \text{‘torture’}
\end{align*}
\]

PAST 3SG INDEF \text{rabolt} \quad \text{gyötört}

(ii) the vowel-initial variant -ott/ett/-ütt if the stem is (a) a non-ik Vowel-deleting Stem which ends in a consonant other than l or r, or (b) it is an -ik-class Vowel-deleting Stem. In these cases the unstable vowel of the stem deletes since the suffix is vowel-initial:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{forag} & \quad \text{érez} & \text{ugrik} & \quad \text{fürdik} & \quad \text{lélegzik} \\
\text{‘turn’} & \quad \text{‘feel’} & \text{‘jump’} & \quad \text{‘bathe’} & \quad \text{‘breathe’}
\end{align*}
\]

PAST 3SG INDEF \text{forgott} \quad \text{érzett} \quad \text{ugrott} \quad \text{fürdött} \quad \text{lélégezzett}

19.1.2 Vowel-deleting -ik Stems

Some verbal Vowel-deleting Stems are -ik verbs as well. The unstable vowel of these stems (which would show up before a consonant-initial suffix) is not apparent in the dictionary forms of these verbs, which have the suffix -ik. However, the unstable vowel is always predictable. As is regular with Vowel-deleting Stems, it is o or e or ő, whose selection is determined by the preceding vowels of the stem according to the rules of Vowel Harmony (Section 1.4); fürdik ‘bathe’ – fürödni ‘to bathe’, lélegzik ‘breathe’ – lélegzeti ‘to breathe’, ugrik ‘jump’ – ugorni ‘to jump’.

19.1.2.1 Past Forms

For the past forms of Vowel-deleting -ik Stems, see Section 19.1.1.

19.1.2.2 2SG PRES INDEF, 2PL PRES INDEF, 3PL PRES INDEF, 1SG+ 2SG/PL,

\textbf{Conditional and Infinitive Forms}

After Vowel-deleting -ik Stems, both the vowel-initial and the non-vowel-initial variants of the 2SG PRES INDEF, the 2PL PRES INDEF, the 3PL PRES INDEF, the 1SG+ 2SG/PL, the Conditional and the Infinitive suffixes are possible. The unstable vowel of the stem is deleted or retained depending on whether the vowel-initial or the consonant-initial variant of the suffix is chosen. This is shown below using the verbs fürdik ‘bathe’, lélegzik ‘breathe’ and ugrik ‘jump’ as examples:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{suffix variants} & \quad \text{after Vowel-deleting -ik Stems} \\
\text{2SG PRES INDEF} & \quad -szl-aszl-észsz & \text{ugraszsz} \quad \text{ugorszsz} \\
& \quad -öll-ell-öl & \text{fürdeszsz} \quad \text{fürödöszsz} \quad \text{lélégészsz}
\end{align*}
\]

\footnote{In 2SG Pres Indef, sibilant final stems take the suffix -öll-ell-öl (see Section 11.1.1) which is always vowel-initial – thus, there is no alternative form.}
### 19. Verb Stems

#### 2PL PRES INDEF
- **-toki/-teki/-töki/-otoki/-etek-öök**
  - ugotok
  - ugotok
  - füroðok
  - füroðok
  - leležegtek
  - leležegtek

#### 3PL PRES INDEF
- **-naki/-neki/-anak/-enek**
  - ugorak
  - ugorak
  - füroδok
  - füroδok
  - leležegtek
  - leležegtek

#### 1SG 2SG/PL
- **-laki/-leki/-alaki/-elek**
  - ugorak
  - ugrak
  - füroδok
  - füroδok
  - leležegtek
  - leležegtek

#### CONDITIONAL
- **-ni/-ani/-en**
  - ugorak
  - ugorak
  - füroδok
  - füroδok
  - leležegtek
  - leležegtek

#### INFINITIVE
- **-ni/-ani/-eni**
  - ugorak
  - ugorak
  - füroδok
  - füroδok
  - leležegtek
  - leležegtek

---

**After Vowel-deleting non-ik Stems**, only the consonant-initial variants of the 2SG PRES INDEF, the 2PL PRES INDEF, the 3PL PRES INDEF, the 1SG 2SG/PL, the CONDITIONAL and the INFINITIVE suffixes are possible. The unstable vowel of the stem is retained:

**suffix variants**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2SG PRES INDEF</th>
<th>3PL PRES INDEF</th>
<th>3PL PRES INDEF</th>
<th>2SG/PL 1SG</th>
<th>CONDITIONAL</th>
<th>INFINITIVE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-sz/-asz/-esz</td>
<td>-toki/-teki/-töki/-otoki/-etek-öök</td>
<td>-naki/-neki/-anak/-enek</td>
<td>-laki/-leki/-alaki/-elek</td>
<td>-ni/-ani/-en</td>
<td>-ni/-ani/-eni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rabol</td>
<td>forog</td>
<td>rabolnak</td>
<td>foroguk</td>
<td>rabolnak</td>
<td>rabolni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>’rob’</td>
<td>’urn’</td>
<td>’roblsz’</td>
<td>’forogsz’</td>
<td>’roblak’</td>
<td>’roblni’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### The following is a list of some common Vowel-deleting Stems:

- **andalog**
- **dramlik**
- **beccmérel**
- **becsül**
- **bélvegez**
- **bonlikik**
- **botlik**
- **buzog**
- **céloz**
- **csépel**
- **ceperseg**
- **didereg**
- **döglik**
- **dohányzik**
- **díbörög**
- **ébedel**
- **ellenez**
- **énékél**
- **enyelleg**
- **érdelem**
- **érez**
- **érzelez**
- **fanyalog**
- **forog**
- **fazlik**
- **feldoklik**
- **feldokol**
- **föndik**
- **füstööög**
- **gatól**
- **goszlög**
- **gyakorol**
- **gyászol**
- **győrör**
- **hajlik**
- **hajol**
- **haldoklik**
- **hangzik**

(Some of the verb stems listed have variants with pre-verbs (cf. Chapter 21) which may have different meanings. With a few exceptions only the stems are listed here—the variants are also Vowel-deleting Stems.)

---

The same variation can also be found in the ‘personal’ infinitive, i.e., when the infinitive takes possessive suffixes (see Section 17.1.2); *ugron*/*ugorom* ‘for me to jump’, *ugronad*/*ugornad* ‘for you to jump’, etc.
**19. Verb Stems**

| meszarol | 'butcher' | sugarzik | 'radiate' |
| mosolyog | 'smile' | sürög | 'hurry' |
| mosog | 'move' | szagol | 'smell' |
| nyavalog | 'whine' | seged | 'feel giddy' |
| nyitog | 'swarm' | szegelyez | 'border' |
| ocsoval | 'belittle' | serepel | 'perform' |
| ogyegy | 'loiter' | serez | 'obtain' |
| omlik | 'fall down' | tamolog | 'stagger' |
| omlik | 'spill' | tekozol | 'squander' |
| drix | 'guard' | térdepel | 'kneel' |
| dröl | 'grind' | terem | 'grow' |
| orvosol | 'cure' | tévelgy | 'go astray' |
| oszlak | 'disperse' | tipor | 'trample' |
| osztönös | 'encourage' | tisztelep | 'salute' |
| öltik | 'come to the idea' | toboroz | 'recruit' |
| panaszol | 'complain' | toporog | 'stand uneasily' |
| párlog | 'evaporate' | törölg | 'wipe' |
| paltogzik | 'flake off' | túlrag | 'exaggerate' |
| pazarol | 'waste' | tündöklük | 'shine' |
| pecsétel | 'stamp' | udvarol | 'court' |
| peder | 'twirl' | üdvözöl | 'greet' |
| perel | 'sue' | ugrik | 'jump' |
| pezseg | 'fizz' | ünnepek | 'celebrate' |
| pödör | 'twirl' | vádal | 'accuse' |
| pörog | 'revolve' | vándorol | 'wander' |
| pödol | 'replace' | várásg | 'practise magic' |
| rabol | 'rob' | vásárl | 'buy' |
| res哲 | 'vibrate' | végez | 'finish' |
| rögtönöz | 'improvise' | vörösz | 'bleed' |
| romlik | 'become worse' | vezekel | 'expiate' |
| sajog | 'ache' | vezényel | 'conduct' |
| sebez | 'wound' | virágzik | 'flower' |
| seper | 'weep' | viszhangzik | 'echo' |
| sistereg | 'sizzle' | viszolyog | 'shudder at sg' |
| sodor | 'roll' | viszonoz | 'return' |
| sőpör | 'weep' | zög | 'rattle' |

**19.3 Defective Stems**

Defective Stems lack certain forms that regular verbs have (they have incomplete paradigms).

For example, Defective Stems do not have Conjunctive-Imperative forms, so it is not possible to use the verb csuklik 'hiccup' (which is a Defective Stem), in constructions that would require a Conjunctive-Imperative form: "I don't want you to hiccup."

Most Defective Stems are -ik verbs (e.g. csuklik), two are non-ik verbs (két 'doubt' and sínyl- 'suffer'). All Defective Stems end in two consonants (these are the two consonants preceding the suffix -ik in the case of -ik verbs), but it is not possible to tell if a verb stem is defective or non-defective on the basis of its shape alone. For example, fuldoklik 'gasp for breath, suffocate' is non-defective (compare the very similar defective csuklik): "I don't want you to gasp for breath."
19. Verb Stems

The missing forms are not random. Only forms in which the defective stem is followed by a vowel-initial suffix are possible, so suffixes that only have consonant-initial variants cannot be added to defective stems. A suffix which has a vowel-initial variant can be added to a Defective Stem (in its vowel-initial variant, naturally). For example, the suffix -hat/het 'may' does not have a vowel-initial variant, so it is not possible to say 'may hiccup' by adding the suffix to the stem csukl-, but it is possible to put the same stem in the past because the past suffix -ott/ett/ott/ett does have a vowel-initial variant: csuklott '3SG INDEF PAST'. Note that []-Initial suffix-varients count as consonant-initial (see Sections 11.2, 14.1.4 and 14.2).

The following is a list of some common Defective Stems:

(Some of the verb stems listed have variants with pre-verbs (cf. Chapter 21) which may have different meanings. With a few exceptions, only the stems are listed here – the variants are also Defective Stems).

aránlyik  'be in proportion to sg'
ágýáramlik  'devolve on'
bejellegzifik  'be all over'
bálvik  'stink'
bsuklik  'hiccup'
díszlik  'adorn'
elemzlik  'pass quickly'
értik  'be felt'
fényvélemlik  'gather'
félix  'shine'
feálik  'come unstitched'
fogzik  'teethe'
fraylik  'fray'
habzlik  'foam'
hámlik  'poel'
hanyatlík  'degenerate'
izlik  'like the taste of'
kádlik  'doubt'
kiszüirentlik  'can be faintly heard'
kódlík  'be seen in the mist'

magaslik  'tower'
megezőmörlik  'become sated'
meghasonlik  'conflict with'
morálik  'rumble'
örvénlylik  'whirl'
parászlik  'glow'
patakkik  'gush'
porlik  'become dust'
relik  'lie in'
rémlík  'vaguely remember'
robajlik  'rumble'
sejlik  'make itself felt'
siklik  'slide'
sínlyl  'suffer'
sődlik  'loom darkly'
szalglik  'smell'
szüriendik  'filter out'
türelmek  'crease'
vedlik  'slough'
villámlik  'strike'
vonaglik  'write'
zaľlik  'happen'

19.4 sz/d and sz/z Stems

19.4.1 Cszik verbs

Cszik verbs, i.e. verbs that end in a consonant plus -szik in their 'dictionary' form (3SG PRES INDEF) behave in a special way in that they have an 'alternative stem'3.

In the alternative stem, the -sz- of the ending -szik is replaced by -od/-ed- (sz/d Stems) and rarely by -oz/-ez- (sz/z Stems). The endings -od/-ed- and -oz/-ez- conform to Vowel Harmony:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>sz/d stem</th>
<th>sz/z stem</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-od/-ed-</td>
<td>-oz/-ez-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mosakszik  'wash oneself'</td>
<td>szándékszik  'intend'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mosakódik  'wash oneself'</td>
<td>szándékdik  'intend'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nóvekszik  'grow'</td>
<td>igyekszik  'try hard'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nóvékedik  'grow'</td>
<td>igyékézik  'try hard'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3Note the verbs haragszik 'be angry', fekszik 'lie', alszik 'sleep', whose alternative stems have -ud/ud- (hovagudhat 's/he may be angry', fekündhet 's/he may be lying', aludhat 's/he may be asleep') and the verb alapaszik 'be based on' whose alternative verb has -ud- (alapudhat 'it may be based on'). These stems are also peculiar in that some of the inflected forms of their alternative stems are also missing. Note the exceptional forms fekhet 's/he may be lying', alhat 's/he may be asleep'.

19.4.1.1 The inflection of Cszik verbs

There is no meaning difference between the Cszik stem and the alternative stem of the same verb. The alternative stems behave in a completely regular way, i.e. like any regular verb. (This means that all the inflected forms of the alternative verbs exist.)

The Cszik stems, on the other hand, are very similar to the Defective Stems: they can only combine with a vowel-initial suffix.

3This is not true of stems that have t before the ending -szik. Verbs which end in -szik do not have alternative stems and behave like regular verbs that end in two consonants. There are only four verbs of this kind: hallószik 'be heard', játékszik 'play', látószik 'see' and testszik 'like'.

4There are only four sz/z stems: embékszikit/ékszik  'remember', igyéksziki/gyékézik  'try hard', gyílszik/gylések  'gather', szándéksziksztándékszik  'mind'.
19. Verb Stems

- Suffixes that only have consonant-initial variants cannot be added to Czik stems. For example, the suffix -hat/-het ‘may’ does not have a vowel-initial variant, so it cannot combine with a Czik stem and the alternative stem must be used for the -hat/-het form instead: mosakszik ‘wash oneself’ - mosakodhat ‘may wash oneself’, igyekszik ‘try hard’ - igyekezhet ‘may try hard’, etc. Note that box-initial suffix-variants count as consonant-initial (see Sections 11.2, 14.1 and 14.2).

- Suffixes which only have vowel-initial variants may combine both with a Czik stem and its alternative stem too, so typically both forms can be used: 1SG PRES -oml-ennl-ön; mosakszom or mosakodom ‘I wash myself’; 3SG PRES INDEF -ik: igyekszik ‘try hard’ - igyekezik ‘(s)he tries hard’, etc.

- A suffix which has vowel-initial variants as well as consonant-initial variants can be added to a Czik stem (in its vowel-initial variant) and to the alternative stem (in its consonant-initial variant) too, so typically both forms can be used: 3PL PRES INDEF -naki-neki-anaki-enek; mosakszanak or mosakodnak ‘they wash themselves’; igyekszene ‘try hard’ - igyekezne ‘they try hard’, etc.

Note that the past, the conditional and the infinitive forms must be based on the alternative stems (and never on a Czik stem) in spite of the fact that the relevant suffixes do have vowel-initial variants (PAST: -oml-ett/ött/itt; COND: -nl-anl-enl; INF:-nl-anl-enl):  

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PAST</td>
<td>3SG INDEF</td>
<td>mosakodott ‘he washed himself’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1PL INDEF</td>
<td>mosakodtunk ‘we washed ourselves’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COND</td>
<td>3SG INDEF</td>
<td>mosakodna ‘he would wash himself’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1PL INDEF</td>
<td>mosakodnunk ‘we would wash ourselves’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INF</td>
<td></td>
<td>mosakodnį ‘to wash oneself’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note the exceptional 3SG PAST INDEF form feküdt ‘lay’ and aludt ‘slept’.

19.4.2 -uszik/-őszik verbs

Vszik verbs, i.e. verbs that end in a vowel plus -szik in their ‘dictionary’ form (3SG PRES INDEF) behave in a completely regular fashion except when the vowel preceding -szik is u or ü. Three verbs belong to this group: aluszik ‘sleep’, aluskzik ‘baggage’ and esküzik ‘wear’. These stems have alternative stems in which the stem-final sz changes to a d: alud-, alud-, esküd-. They are used in the following way:

- Suffixes that only have consonant-initial variants can only be added to the d-final alternative stems: aludhat ‘may sleep’, aludhat ‘may baggage’ and esküdhet ‘may wear’. Note the form alhat ‘may sleep’. box-initial suffix-variants count as consonant-initial (see Sections 11.2, 14.1 and 14.2).

- Suffixes that only have vowel-initial variants can only be added to the sz-final stems: 1SG PRES aluszom, aluskom, esküzöm. Note that the u is usually left out in the relevant forms of aluszik: alusk, alszom, etc.

- Suffixes which have vowel-initial variants as well as consonant-initial variants take their consonant-initial form and are usually added to the d-final stems of aluskzik and esküzik; e.g. 3PL PRES INDEF aludnakan, esküdnék (though sometimes the sz-final stems can also be used). The d-final stems must be used past, the conditional and the infinitive (the suffixes appear in their regular variants): PAST3SG INDEF aluddt, esküddtt, PAST1PL INDEF aludtünk, esküdtünk; COND aludtana, esküdtene; INF aludtani, esküdtene.

Aluszik often behaves in a special way with these suffixes. It takes the sz-final stem alus- or (usually) alsz- to form the 2SG INDEF PRES, 2PL PRES INDEF PRES and 3PL INDEF PRES:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2SG INDEF PRES</td>
<td>alusol</td>
<td>or alszol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2PL INDEF PRES</td>
<td>aluszok</td>
<td>or alszok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3PL INDEF PRES</td>
<td>aluszak</td>
<td>or alszak</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(see Section 11.1 for the suffixes)

By contrast, all the past, the conditional and the infinitive forms are based on the d-final stem:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PAST</td>
<td>aludt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COND</td>
<td>aludn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INF</td>
<td>aludő</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(see Section 12.1 for the suffixes)

* This verb has a Czik variant alszik.

Note the irregular form of the past suffix in 3SG PAST INDEF aludt.)
19.4.3 sz/d/v and sz/z/v Stems

In some (not all) sz/d and sz/z Stems, the stem final -sz- is replaced by a -v- before the active (present) participle suffix -ől-ő (see Section 17.2.1) and the noun-forming suffix -ás-és:

-ől-ő -ás-és
haragshzik ‘be angry’ haragyő haragyás
alvószik ‘sleep’ alvó alvás
növekvőszik ‘grow’ növekvő növekrés
t´eszkőszik ‘swear’ t’eszkővő t’eszkővés

Note that the same suffixes — although they are vowel-initial — are added to the d-final alternative stems of other (simple) sz/d and sz/z Stems:

-ől-ő -ás-és
mosakshzik mosakodó mosakodás
verekshzik verekedő verekedés

It is unpredictable which sz/d, sz/z stem is an sz/d/v, sz/z/v stem and which one is a simple sz/d, sz/z Stem.

The following is a list of sz/d, sz/z Stems. In the list sz/z stems are underlined and sz/d/v, sz/z/v stems are indicated with the symbol ‘v’ after the stem.

(Some of the verb stems listed have variants with pre-verbs (cf. Chapter 21) which may have different meanings. With a few exceptions, only the stems are listed here — the variants are also sz/d, sz/z Stems).

alapszik ‘be based on’ furakszik ‘push ahead’
alakszik ‘bargain’ gazdagszik ‘become rich’
alszik v ‘sleep’ gyanakszik v ‘be suspicious’
lakvőszik v ‘sleep’ gyartapszik ‘become richer’
baszakszik ‘fuck around’ gyülekszik ‘gather’
cselekszik v ‘act’ haragshzik v ‘be angry’
csakvőszik ‘be with sg/sb’ haragyőszik v ‘be happy’
diekszik v ‘boast’ kötekszik ‘pick a quarrel’
diekszik v ‘boast’ Megalvőszik v ‘compromise’
emlékszik ‘remember’ mégalvőszik v ‘compromise’
eskőszik v ‘swear’ letelepszik ‘settle’
fekszik v ‘lie’ megalvőszik v ‘compromise’

19.5 Irregular Verbs

In addition to the stem classes described above there are ten verbs whose conjugation is irregular: tesz ‘put, act’, vesz ‘take, buy’, hisz ‘believe’, visz ‘carry’, lesz ‘be, become’, eszik ‘eat’, iszik ‘drink’, van ‘be’, mey ‘go’, jön ‘come’.

19.5.1 tesz, vesz, hisz, visz, lesz, eszik, iszik


19.5.1.1 Present Tense

In the present (definite and indefinite) they behave like regular verbs (see Chapter 11). Tesz and iszik are given as examples, but the others are conjugated in the same way. Note that iszik is an anti-harmonic stem (see Section 1.4) and thus takes the back vowel variants of harmonic suffixes:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present Indefinite</th>
<th>Present Definite</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>iszik ‘drink’</td>
<td>iszik ‘drink’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘drink’ ‘put, act’</td>
<td>‘drink’ ‘put, act’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>isom ‘send’</td>
<td>tesz</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

SG 1st

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>iszok ‘send’</td>
<td>iszol ‘send’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>teszek</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2nd

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>iszik ‘send’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tesz</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3rd

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pl 1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>isznak ‘send’</td>
<td>isztok ‘send’</td>
<td>isznak ‘send’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tesznak</td>
<td>tesztek</td>
<td>tesznak</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The relevant forms of the stem alapszik ‘be based on’ are alapuló and alapulás.
19. Verb Stems

19.5.1.2 Past Tense

- In the past (definite and indefinite) the stems of tesz, vessz, hisz, vissz, lesz are tett-, vett-, hitt-, vittt-, lett- respectively:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Past Indefinite</th>
<th>Past Definite</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>tesz</td>
<td>tesz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vissz</td>
<td>vissz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'put, act'</td>
<td>'put, act'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'carry'</td>
<td>'carry'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sg 1st</td>
<td>tettém</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vittém</td>
<td>tettém</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>tettél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vittél</td>
<td>tetteled</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>tett</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vittte</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl 1st</td>
<td>tettünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vittünk</td>
<td>tettük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>tettek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vittékek</td>
<td>tettékek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>tettek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vitték</td>
<td>tették</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- The past stems of eszik, iszik are ett-, itt- before vowel-initial suffixes, and evett, ivott in the 3rd person indefinite singular when the person/number suffix is zero. Note that iszik is an anti-harmonic stem (see Section 1.4) and thus takes the back vowel variants of harmonic suffixes:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Past Indefinite</th>
<th>Past Definite</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>eszik</td>
<td>eszik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'eat'</td>
<td>'eat'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'carry'</td>
<td>'carry'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sg 1st</td>
<td>ettem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ittam</td>
<td>ettem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>ettél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>innál</td>
<td>ettéed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>evett</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ivott</td>
<td>ette</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl 1st</td>
<td>ettünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ittünk</td>
<td>ettük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>ettettek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ittatók</td>
<td>ettétek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>ették</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>itták</td>
<td>etták</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

19.5.1.3 Conditional

The Conditional (definite and indefinite) stems of tesz, vessz, hisz, vissz, lesz, eszik, iszik to which the regular conditional person/number suffixes (see Chapter 13) are added are tenn-, venn-, hin-, vinn-, lenn-, enn-, inn- respectively:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Conditional Indefinite</th>
<th>Conditional Definite</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>iszik</td>
<td>tesz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'drink'</td>
<td>'put, act'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sg 1st</td>
<td>innék</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tennék</td>
<td>inném</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>innál</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tennél</td>
<td>innád</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>inna</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tenne</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl 1st</td>
<td>innánk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tennénék</td>
<td>innánk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>innátok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tennétek</td>
<td>innátok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>innánek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tennék</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

19.5.1.4 Conjunctive-Imperative

The Conjunctive-Imperative (definite and indefinite) stems of tesz, vessz, hisz, vissz, lesz, eszik, iszik to which the regular conjunctive-imperative endings are added are tegy-, vegy-, higy-, vigy-, legy- egy-, igy-, respectively. They all take the -i-init variants of the Conjunctive-Imperative endings. Note, however, that with the exception of higy-, which regularly becomes higgy- when the endings are attached, there is no germination of the stem-final consonant:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Conjunctive-Imperative Indefinite</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>iszik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'drink'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sg 1st</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tegyek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tegyél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SHORT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tegyen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl 1st</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tegyünk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tegyetek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tegyenek</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### 19. Verb Stems

#### CONJUNCTIVE-IMPERATIVE DEFINITE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td>igyam</td>
<td>tegyem</td>
<td>higgyem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>tegyed</td>
<td>higgyed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Short</td>
<td>tedd</td>
<td>hidd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td>igyu</td>
<td>tegyük</td>
<td>higgyük</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>tegyétek</td>
<td>higgyétek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>tegyék</td>
<td>higgyék</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note: Some of these verbs lack the alternative short forms in the 2sg Conjointive-Imperative (lesz lacks all definite forms because it is intransitive). Note also that most of the short forms are somewhat irregular in that they are not based on the same stem variants as the other Conjointive-Imperative forms:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### INFINITIVE

teni venni hinni vinni lenni ennii inni

#### PRESENT PARTICIPLE

tevő vevő hívő vivő levő evő ívő

#### NOUN-FORMING -ás/-és

tevés - hívés - levés evés ívás

### 19.5.1.5 Miscellaneous other forms

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note: The remaining three irregular verbs, van ‘be, have’, megy ‘go’, jön ‘come’, have even more irregular paradigms. All three are intransitive, so they do not have definite conjugations.

#### 19.5.2 Present Tense

**Present Indefinite**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 19.5.2.2 Past Tense

**Past Indefinite**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SG</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### 19. Verb Stimns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pl</th>
<th>1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
<th>voltunk</th>
<th>mentünk</th>
<th>jöttünk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>voltatok</td>
<td>mentetek</td>
<td>jöttetek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>voltak</td>
<td>mentek</td>
<td>jöttek</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 19.5.2.3 Conditional

**Conditional Indefinite**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>van</th>
<th>megy</th>
<th>jön</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'be, have'</td>
<td>'go'</td>
<td>'come'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SG 1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
<th>volnék</th>
<th>mennék</th>
<th>jönnék</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>volnál</td>
<td>mennél</td>
<td>jönnél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>volna</td>
<td>menne</td>
<td>jönee</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pl 1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
<th>volnánk</th>
<th>mennénk</th>
<th>jönnénk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>volnátok</td>
<td>mennéték</td>
<td>jönnéték</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>volnának</td>
<td>mennének</td>
<td>jönnének</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 19.5.2.4 Conjunctive-Imperative

**Conjunctive-Imperative Indefinite**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>van</th>
<th>megy</th>
<th>jön</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'be, have'</td>
<td>'go'</td>
<td>'come'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SG 1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
<th>legyek</th>
<th>menjek</th>
<th>jöjjek</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>legyél</td>
<td>menjél</td>
<td>jöjjél</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SHORT</td>
<td>légy</td>
<td>menj</td>
<td>gyere (töüj)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>legyen</td>
<td>menjen</td>
<td>jöjjön</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pl 1&lt;sup&gt;st&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
<th>legyünk</th>
<th>menjünk</th>
<th>jöjjünk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;nd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>legyetek</td>
<td>menjetek</td>
<td>gyertek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;rd&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>legyenek</td>
<td>menjeneck</td>
<td>jöjjeneck</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

*Note that the stem *van* does not have Conjunctive-Imperative forms, and the Conjunctive-Imperative forms of *lesz* are used instead (see Section 19.5.1.4).*
20. Verbal Suffixes

Some of the verbal meanings that are expressed by auxiliaries or special constructions in English are expressed by suffixes in Hungarian. The suffixes listed here are productive (i.e., typically they can be added to verbs without restriction) and may be followed by inflectional suffixes (Past, Conditional, and Conjunctive-Imperative):

20.1 Causative: -at/-et/-tat/-tet

The causative is used to denote that the subject has the action expressed by the verb done by somebody else. The causative suffix has the following variants:

- atl- et
- tat- tet

The choice between the back vowel variants versus the front vowel variants is determined by Vowel Harmony.

Generally, monosyllabic stems take the -atl- et variant and polysyllabic stems take the -tat- tet variant:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>MONOSYLLABIC</th>
<th>POLYSYLLABIC</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mos</td>
<td>küld</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'wash'</td>
<td>'send'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>késő</td>
<td>keres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'look for'</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CAUSATIVE

mosat küldet olvastat kereset

* Note that the syllable count must be based on the simple verb stem, e.g., lemos 'wash off' behaves in the same way as mos 'wash': lemosat

There are many stems that behave idiosyncratically: csikorgat 'make sg screech', altat 'make sb sleep', fektet 'make sb lie down', etc.

* Note the causative of the irregular stems tesz 'put, act', vesz 'take, buy', hisz 'believe', vissz 'carry', eszik 'eat', iszik 'drink':

20.2 Reflexive

Reflexive suffixes express that the subject and the object of the verb are the same. There are several reflexive suffixes:

- kodik/-kedik/-ködik/-akodik/-ekedik
- kizik/-kezik/-kizik/-akizik/-ekizik
- ódik/-ózik
- ód(í)zík/-ö(í)zík

The variation in vowels is determined by Vowel Harmony, but otherwise it is rather unpredictable.

Examples include mos 'wash' mosakodik 'wash him/her/it-self', fésül 'comb' fésültökédik 'comb him/her/it-self', táplál 'feed' tátoplókozik 'feed him/her/it-self', etc. Note that it is not always possible to supply a reflexive meaning for many verbs ending in the suffixes given above, e.g., jelenkezik 'stand up to report', gondolkozik 'think', etc.

* Note that verbs with the reflexive suffix are -ik verbs and therefore the final ik of the suffix only appears in 3SG PRES INDEF.

A nagynénén mindennap háromszor mosakodik.
My aunt washes herself three times a day.

Biztos, hogy fésültökérdél?
'Are you sure you have combed your hair?'

20.3 Possibility/permission: -hat/-het

The suffix used to express possibility or permission is:

-hat/-het
20. Verbal Suffixes

This is a truly productive form of verbal suffixation with the meanings expressed in English by can, could, may, might, be allowed to, etc. The choice between the variants is determined by Vowel Harmony.

lát  néz  öl
'see'   'watch'   'kill'

láthat  nézhet  ölhethet
'may see'  'may watch'  'may kill'


tesz  vesz  hisz  vissz  eszik  iszik
-hat/-het  tehet  vehet  hihet  vihet  ehethet  ihat

jön  megy  van

-hat/-het  jöhet  mehet  lehet

Megnézhethetem a fotóidat?
'Can I look at your photos?'

Még elérhetjük a vonotat, ha sietünk.
'We may still catch the train if we hurry.'

21. Preverbs

Hungarian verbs often have preverbs, i.e. they often take particles in prefix position. The most frequent preverbs are listed below. It is important to realise that the meanings listed with the preverbs are often approximate because, frequently, the meaning of a prefix-verb combination cannot be derived from the meaning of its parts (like the combination of a verb and a preposition in English). The meanings given below are the ‘literal’ meanings of the preverbs. No meaning will be given if a verbal prefix has no independent meaning in isolation. In the examples cited below the preverb combines with the verb stem in its literal meaning.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>APPROXIMATE MEANING</th>
<th>EXAMPLE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>abba</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>agyon</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alá</td>
<td>(to) under</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>át</td>
<td>across, through</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>be</td>
<td>in(to)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bele</td>
<td>into</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>benn</td>
<td>in, inside</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>egybe</td>
<td>into one, together</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>el</td>
<td>away</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ellen</td>
<td>against</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elő</td>
<td>forward, forth, do previously</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>előre</td>
<td>forward</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fel, föl</td>
<td>up</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>félbe</td>
<td>into half, &lt;incompleteness&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>félre</td>
<td>aside, to the side</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Preverbs</td>
<td>Meaning</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>félül, fölül</em></td>
<td>over</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>fenn, föm</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>hátra</em></td>
<td>(to the) back</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>haza</em></td>
<td>homeward</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>helyre</em></td>
<td>right</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>hosszat</em></td>
<td>to, towards, against</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ide</em></td>
<td>here</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>keresztül</em></td>
<td>across, through</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ketté</em></td>
<td>into two</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ki</em></td>
<td>out</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>körül</em></td>
<td>around, round</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>közbe</em></td>
<td>in the middle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>közre</em></td>
<td>apart, off</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>külfön</em></td>
<td>down, off</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>meg</em></td>
<td>&lt;perfective&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>mellé</em></td>
<td>next to, not to the right place</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>neki</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>oda</em></td>
<td>(to) there, up to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>össze</em></td>
<td>together</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>rá</em></td>
<td>onto</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>raja</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>széjjel</em></td>
<td>apart</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>szerbe</em></td>
<td>opposite, in the eye</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>szerte</em></td>
<td>in all directions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>szét</em></td>
<td>apart, into pieces</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>telre</em></td>
<td>full, completely</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**21.1 Spatial meanings**

Some of the verbal prefixes above have concrete spatial adverbial meanings e.g.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Preverb</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>be</td>
<td>‘in, into’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bele</td>
<td>‘into’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki</td>
<td>‘out of’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>le</td>
<td>‘down’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fel, föl</td>
<td>‘up’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>el</td>
<td>‘away, off’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vissza</td>
<td>‘back’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>at</td>
<td>‘across, over’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>végig</td>
<td>‘along’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ide</td>
<td>‘here’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>oda</td>
<td>‘there’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rá</td>
<td>‘on, onto’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**In their concrete spatial meanings preverbs usually require that the dependent noun they refer to should be in some adverbial case (i.e. not the NOMINATIVE or the ACCUSATIVE):**

- Mindjárt kiugróm az ablakon.
  ’I’ll jump out of the window here.’
- Mindjárt beugróm az vízbe.
  I’ll soon jump into the water there.’
21. Preverbs

Odamegyek a házhoz.
'I'll walk up to the house.'

Kimégyek a szobából.
'I go out of the room.'

Részeg az asztalra.
'She jumped onto the table.'

The case required depends on the preverb and the verb stem (i.e. the same preverb may require different cases with different verb stems and the same verb stem may require different cases with different preverbs.)

21.2 Aspectual meanings

Some of the verbal prefixes have aspectual meanings. They usually express the completion of the action (like some uses of the Perfect tenses in English) or the beginning of the action:

(i) COMPLETION: meg, el, ki

Anna tegnap csinálta a házi feladatát.
'Yesterday Anna was doing her homework.'

Anna tegnap megcsinálta a házi feladatát.
'Yesterday Anna completed (doing) her homework.'

Anna tegnap olvasta a könyvét.
'Yesterday Anna was reading her book.'

Anna tegnap kiolvasta a könyvét.
'Yesterday Anna read her book to the end.'

Anna tegnap ment az úton.
'Yesterday Anna was walking down the road.'

Anna tegnap elment.
'Yesterday Anna left.'

(ii) BEGINNING: meg, el

A gyerek megszólalt.
'The baby started to talk.'

A gyerek elmosolyodott.
'The baby started to smile.'

21.3 The position of preverbs

It is not possible to say which preverbs take which preverbs in which aspectual meaning. When they are used in an aspectual meaning, preverbs usually require that the dependent noun they refer to (if there is one) should be in the Accusative.

(iii) IDIOMATIC

Often the preverb+verb combination has a meaning which cannot be derived from the meanings of its parts. For example:

ki 'out'  csinál 'do' kicsinál 'kill, finish off'
át 'across, over'  ver 'beat'  átver 'cheat on sb'

When used in this abstract, idiomatic sense, verbal prefixes usually require that the dependent noun they refer to (if there is one) should be in the Accusative.

Although (as their name suggests) preverbs are attached to the beginning of verbs, they can become separated from the verb and sometimes may actually appear after the verb:

Megvette a könyvet.
'I have bought the book.'

Meg kellett vennem a könyvet.
'I had to buy the book.'

Nem vettem meg a könyvet.
'I have not bought the book.'

A könyvet vettem meg.
'It was the book that I have bought.'

For the position of preverbs in constructions, see Section 23.6.
22. Word Formation: Derivational Suffixes

22.1 Derived Verbs

22.1.1 Verbs from Verbs

- at-éti-tati-teti (Causative), see Section 20.1.
- kodiki-kédiki-ködiki-akoédiki-ekédik
- kézi-keziki-kézi-akoéziki-ekézik
- ödiki-ódik
- ó(d)zik-ó(d)zik (Reflexive), see Section 20.2.
- hal-heti (Possibility/permission), see Section 20.3.
- gat-get-ogat-egat-ögät

FORM: harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

The vowel-initial variants occur after monosyllabic stems, the consonant-initial ones after polysyllabic stems.

MEANING: frequentative

EXAMPLES:

olvas 'read'  
olvasgat 'read a little'
emel 'lift'  
emelget 'lift repeatedly'
nyom 'push'  
nyomgat 'push repeatedly'
níz 'look'  
nézeget 'look from time to time'
üt 'hit'  
ütöget 'hit repeatedly'

22.1.2 Verbs from Nouns

- ol-éll-öll-l

FORM: harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

The vowel-initial variants occur after consonant-final stems, the consonant-initial one occurs after vowel-final stems.

In some cases the suffix-initial vowel may disappear when a vowel-initial suffix follows the suffix itself.

☞ Some verbs derived with this suffix are -ik verbs.

☞ Note that the suffix-initial vowel is a/e after Lowering Stems (see Section 4.1).

☞ Note that final a/e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5).

MEANING: various actions/states involving the noun.

EXAMPLES:

por 'dust'  
porol 'dust'  
porolok 1sg pres indef
por 'dust'  
porlök 'become dust'
elnök 'president'  
elnököl 'preside'  
elnök(ó)lök 1sg pres indef
kéz 'hand'  
kezel 'handle'
kefe 'brush'  
kefel 'brush'
nýár 'summer'  
nyarál 'spend the summer vacation'
fül 'ear'  
fülel 'listen carefully'

- oz-éz-öz-öz

FORM: harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

The vowel-initial variants occur after consonant-final stems, the consonant-initial one occurs after vowel-final stems.

In some cases the suffix-initial vowel may disappear when a vowel-initial suffix follows the suffix itself.

☞ Some verbs derived with this suffix are -ik verbs.

☞ Note that the suffix-initial vowel is a/e after Lowering Stems (see Section 4.1).

☞ Note that final a/e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5).
22. Word Formation: Derivational Suffixes

**MEANING:** various actions/states involving the noun

**EXAMPLES:**
- folia 'patch'
- keret 'frame'
- elem 'element'
- fiúgöny 'curtain'
- bridzes 'bridge'
- gyűrű 'ring'
- fal 'wall'
- szög 'nail'

• át

**FORM:** non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

**MEANING:** various actions/states involving the noun
It always forms transitive verbs.

**EXAMPLES:**
- alap 'foundation'  
- tan 'teaching'

• -óst/ésóst-ösést-sit

**FORM:** harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
The vowel-initial variants occur after consonant-final stems,
the consonant-initial one occurs after vowel-final stems.

**MEANING:** 'create an N'
It always forms transitive verbs.

**EXAMPLES:**
- csoport 'group'
- film 'film'
- kőd 'fog'
- áru 'product'
- forradalom 'revolution'

22.1.3 Verbs from Adjectives

• -észık

**FORM:** harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
If the stem ends in a vowel, the vowel is deleted before the suffix.

**MEANING:** 'catch, hunt N'

**EXAMPLES:** hal 'fish'  
- fiúrj 'quali'
- lepke 'butterfly'

• -ül

**FORM:** harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
If the stem ends in a vowel, the vowel is deleted before the suffix.

**MEANING:** 'become ADJ'
Always forms intransitive verbs.

**EXAMPLES:** szép 'beautiful'  
- vad 'wild'
- fekete 'black'

• -ők

**FORM:** harmonic three-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
If the stem ends in a vowel, the vowel is deleted before the suffix.
22. Word Formation: Derivational Suffixes

Note that the suffix-initial vowel is not subject to Lowering, i.e. it is oelő even after Lowering Stems (see Sections 1.4 and 4.1).

**MEANING:** 'become ADJ'
Always forms intransitive verbs.

**EXAMPLES:**
- piros 'red'
  - pirosodik 'become red'
- kerek 'round'
  - kerekedik 'become round'
- gömbölyű 'spherical'
  - gömbölyűdik 'become spherical'
- szomorú 'sad'
  - szomorodik 'become sad'

### 22.2 Derived Nouns

#### 22.2.1 Nouns from Nouns

- **-ság/-ség**

  **FORM:** harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
  
  Note that final a, e NOT lengthen to á, é before this suffix (see Section 1.5).

  **MEANING:** It derives abstract nouns or collective nouns.

  **EXAMPLES:**
  - anya 'mother'
    - anyaság 'motherhood'
  - hegy 'mountain'
    - hegység 'mountain range'

- **-ász/-ész**

  **FORM:** harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
  
  If the stem ends in a vowel, the vowel is deleted before the suffix.

  **MEANING:** It derives names of occupation.

  **EXAMPLES:**
  - hal 'fish'
    - halász 'fisherman'
  - nyelv 'language'
    - nyelvész 'linguist'
  - szőlő 'grape'
    - szőlész 'viniculturist'

- **-atl/-et**

  **FORM:** harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
  
  It can be attached to the suffix -ász/-ész discussed above.

  **MEANING:** It derives names of institution or field of activity.

### EXAMPLES:

- halász 'fisherman'
- halászat 'fishing'
- nyelvész 'linguist'
- nyelvész 'linguistics'
- szőlész 'viniculturist'
- szőlész 'viniculture, vinery'

- **-ös/-es/-ös/-s**

  **FORM:** harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
  
  The vowel-initial variants occur after consonant-final stems, the consonant-initial one occurs after vowel-final stems.

  Note that the suffix-initial vowel is a/e after Lowering Stems (see Section 4.1)

  Note that final a, e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5)

  **MEANING:** It derives names of occupation and collective nouns.

  **EXAMPLES:**
  - asztal 'table'
    - asztalos 'carpenter'
  - zöldség 'vegetable'
    - zöldséges 'greengrocer'
  - óra 'watch'
    - órás 'watchmaker'
  - fazék 'pot'
    - fazekas 'potter'

- **-kal/-ke**

  **FORM:** harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
  
  Typically, it can be attached to polysyllabic noun stems which are (a) not Lowering Stems (see Section 4.1) and (b) end in r, l, n, ny or the vowel i.

  **MEANING:** diminutive

  **EXAMPLES:**
  - ember 'man'
    - emberke
  - asztal 'table'
    - asztalos
  - vágyon 'wealth'
    - vágyonka
  - asszony 'woman'
    - asszonyka
  - néni 'old woman'
    - nénike

- **-cska/-cske/-cska/-cske**

  **FORM:** harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
  
  The vowel-initial variants occur after consonant-final stems, the consonant-initial one occurs after vowel-final stems.

  This suffix is the truly productive diminutive suffix: it can occur when -kal/-ke cannot, and in many cases even in the environments where -kal/-ke can.
22. Word Formation: Derivational Suffixes

- Note that the suffix-initial vowel is a/e after Lowering Stems (see Section 4.1).
- Note that final a, e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5).
- Note that Vowel-deleting Stems always take this suffix in the diminutive (see Section 4.2).

**MEANING:** diminutive

**EXAMPLES:**
- baj 'trouble' → bajoeska
- sör 'beer' → sörõeske
- szem 'eye' → szemécske
- kalap 'hat' → kalapocska
- üzlet 'business' → üzletécske
- teve 'camel' → tevécske
- esernyő 'umbrella' → esernyőske
- fondí 'thread' → fonalácska
- vár 'castle' → várácska
- szorny 'monster' → szörnyécske
- bokor 'bush' → bokrócska
- ököl 'fist' → öklúcse

- -i

**FORM:** non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

It is attached to shortened forms of given names.

**MEANING:** It derives nicknames.

**EXAMPLES:**
- Péter → Peti
- Márta → Márti
- Miklós → Miki

- -né

**FORM:** non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

It is attached to a man's surname or to the end of his full name (surname followed by the given name).

- Note that final a, e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5).

**MEANING:** 'Mrs'

**-ék**

**FORM:** non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

It is attached to nouns denoting persons (including names). It can follow a possessive suffix. If it is attached to a common noun, it must be used with a definite article.

- Note that final a, e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5).

**MEANING:** group of people associated with N

**EXAMPLES:**
- Nógrádi → Nógrádiék 'Nógrádi and his group'
- Péter → Péterék 'Péter and his group'
- Nógrádi Péter → Nógrádi Péterék 'Nógrádi Péter and his group'
- barátonom → a barátonomék 'my friend and his group'

22.2.2 Nouns from Verbs

- -ás/-és

**FORM:** harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

**MEANING:** It denotes the action itself.

**EXAMPLES:**
- olvas 'read' → olvasás 'reading'
- lebeg 'float' → lebegés 'floating'
- haragyszik 'be angry' → haragyság 'anger'
- verekedik 'fight' → verekedés 'fighting'

- -ál-ó

**FORM:** harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

**MEANING:** agent

**EXAMPLES:**
- olvas 'read' → olvasó 'reader'
- rendez 'direct' → rendező 'director'
22.3 Derived Adjectives

22.3.1 Adjectives from Adjectives

- -ság/-ség

FORM: harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

Note that final a, e DO NOT lengthen to á, é before this suffix (see Section 1.5).

MEANING: It derives abstract nouns (-ness).

EXAMPLES: vad ‘wild’ vadász ‘wildness’
fehér ‘white’ fehérség ‘whiteness’
feketé ‘black’ feketéség ‘blackness’

22.3.2 Adjectives from Verbs

- -ható/-hető

FORM: harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

It can only be attached to a transitive verb.

MEANING: ‘able’

EXAMPLES: olvas ‘read’ olvasható ‘readable’
elvez ‘enjoy’ elvészhető ‘enjoyable’

- -hatálan/-hetetlen

FORM: harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

It can only be attached to a transitive verb.
22. Word Formation: Derivational Suffixes

MEANING: 'un ...-able'

EXAMPLES: olyas 'read'  olyashatatlan 'unreadable'
elvez 'enjoy'  elvezetetlen 'unenjoyable'

**-atlan-etlen**

FORM: harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

MEANING: privative adjective, negative of Passive Participle

EXAMPLES: vár 'wait, expect'  vóralan 'unexpected'
kér 'ask for'  kéréttlen 'unsolicited'

**-ál-ő (Active (Present) Participle), see Section 17.2.1.

**-ott/-ett/-ött/-őtt (Passive (Past) Participle), see Section 17.2.2.

22.3.3 Adjectives from Nouns

**-os/-es/-ös/-s**

FORM: harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
The vowel-initial variants occur after consonant-final stems, the consonant-initial one occurs after vowel-final stems.

☞ Note that the suffix-initial vowel is a/e after Lowering Stems (see Section 4.1).

☞ Note that final a, e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5).

MEANING: 'having N, like N, relating to N'

EXAMPLES: kalóz 'pirate'  kalózos 'pirate-like'
emellet 'storey'  emelletes 'multistorey'
kőd 'fog'  kődés 'foggy'
erős 'strength'  erős 'strong'
mese 'tale'  mesés 'like a tale'
óg 'tooth'  ógás 'having teeth'
sőg 'nail'  sőges 'having nails'

**-ül-őjú-ǰú**

FORM: harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
The vowel-initial variants occur after consonant-final stems, the consonant-initial ones occur after vowel-final stems.

☞ Note that final a, e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5).

**-i**

FORM: non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
It is not used with nouns that end in i (-beli is used instead, see below).

☞ Note that final a, e DO NOT lengthen to á, é before this suffix (see Section 1.5).

MEANING: 'belonging to N, of N, pertaining to N'. It can be added to placenames, nouns referring to time, the names of occupations, professions, institutions.

EXAMPLES: Budapest  budapesti
Pécs  pécši 'of Pécs'
Zala  zala'i 'of Zala'
tégnap  tégnapi

**-nyí**

FORM: non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

MEANING: Derives adjectives of measure from nouns that can mean a unit of measure.

EXAMPLES: marok 'fist'  maroknyí 'handful of'
tácl 'tray'  táclányi 'tray of'

**-szerű**

FORM: non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

☞ Note that final a, e DO NOT lengthen to á, é before this suffix (see Section 1.5).
22. Word Formation: Derivational Suffixes

22.4 Derived Adverbs

22.4.1 Adverbs from Verbs

• -val-ve (Adverbial Participle), see Section 17.2.4.

22.4.2 Adverbs from Adjectives

• -ani/-eni/-n

FORM: harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)
The vowel-initial variants occur after consonant-final stems and vowel-final stems that end in i, t, u, á, a, á. The consonant-initial one occurs after vowel-final stems that end in e, é, a, á. Either the vowel-final variants or the consonant final one can be used after stems that end in á, é.

⇒ Note that final a, e lengthen to á, é before a suffix (see Section 1.5).

MEANING: In the manner expressed by the adjective, ‘-ly’.

EXAMPLES: alatomo 'sneaky' alatomosan 'sneaky'
emberi 'humane' emberiën 'humane'
késerű 'bitter' késerűen 'bitter'
durva 'brutal' durván 'brutal'
sértő 'insulting' sértően 'insulting'

• -ul-ül

FORM: harmonic two-form suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

MEANING: ‘in a language’. It can only be added to adjectives denoting languages.

EXAMPLES: magyar ‘Hungarian’ magyaraul ‘in Hungarian’
német ‘German’ németül ‘in German’
bantu ‘Bantu’ bantuul ‘in Bantu’

• -féle

FORM: non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

⇒ Note that final a, e DO NOT lengthen to á, é before this suffix (see Section 1.5).

MEANING: ‘type of’

EXAMPLES: hal ‘fish’ halféle ‘type of fish’
kutyá ‘dog’ kutyaféle ‘type of dog’

• -fajta

FORM: non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

⇒ Note that final a, e DO NOT lengthen to á, é before this suffix (see Section 1.5).

MEANING: ‘type of’

EXAMPLES: hal ‘fish’ halfajta ‘type of fish’
kutyá ‘dog’ kutyafajta ‘type of dog’

• -beli

FORM: non-harmonic suffix (see Vowel Harmony)

⇒ Note that final a, e DO NOT lengthen to á, é before this suffix (see Section 1.5).

MEANING: ‘belonging to N, of N, pertaining to N’. It can be added to the names of countries, counties, placenames (only if they end in i), institutions and nouns referring to time and place.

EXAMPLES: hold ‘moon’ holdbeli ‘located on the moon’
ház ‘house’ hâzbeli ‘located in (our) house’
23. Constructions and Sentences

23.1 The Possessive Construction

In possessive constructions the possessor noun precedes the possessed noun. The possessor noun is inflected for the DATIVE case and the possessed noun receives a POSSESSIVE/PERS NO. suffix. The possessed number agrees with the possessor in person. If the possessed noun is plural, it receives the plural possessed version of the POSSESSIVE/PERS NO. suffix. The noun in Dative is followed by the definite article az:

Peternek a könyve 'Peter’s book'
a kockának az éle 'the people’s friend'

Peternek a könyvei 'Peter’s books'
a kockának az éleit 'the people’s friends’

It is usual to omit both the dative suffix and the following definite article (never just one of them!):

Peter könyve 'Peter’s book'
a kocka éle 'the edge of the cube'

Peter könyvei 'Peter’s books'
a kocka éleit 'the edges of the cube’

If the possessor is expressed by a personal pronoun, the nominal of the pronoun is used, and the pronoun may be optionally omitted:

az én könyvem a könyvem 'my book’
a te barátod a barátod 'your friend’
a mit készünk a készünk 'our knife’

The 3rd person singular pronoun Ő is used both in the singular and in the plural 3rd person:

az Ő könyve a könyve 'her/his book’
az Ő könyvük a könyvük 'their book’

23.2 The Omission of Personal Pronouns

Personal pronouns may occur in various positions in a Hungarian sentence (subject, direct object, indirect object, adverbial, etc.), but in some positions they are usually omitted if they are not emphatic/contrastive. These positions are the subject position and the direct object position:

(i) Subject position

- Non-contrastive/non-emphatic personal pronouns are usually omitted in subject position in a main clause (the person/number of the subject is marked on the conjugated verb):
  Nézem a tévét. '<I> am watching TV.’
  Sírünk. '<We> cried.’
  Örökké szeretni fogja Júliát. '<He/she> will love Julia forever.’

- A 3rd person subject pronoun cannot be left out from a sentence from which van/vannak is obligatorily omitted (this can happen in the Present Tense, see Section 23.7.2): Ő magas. ‘She/he <is> tall.’; Ők politikusok. ‘They <are> politicians.’

- If the subject pronoun receives contrastive/ephemeral prominence, it is not omitted: MI sírunk. ‘It was us who cried.’

(ii) Direct object position

- 3rd person personal pronouns

  Non-contrastive/non-emphatic singular 3rd person personal pronouns are usually omitted in direct object position (the definite conjugation of the verb indicates the person of the omitted direct object):
  Látod? '<Can you<SUBJECT> see <SOMEBODY>?’
  Tegnap megvettem. '<I<SUBJECT> bought <SOMEBODY> his/her/its <DIRECT OBJECT> yesterday.’
  Elfeléjeztetek. '<They<SUBJECT> forgot <SOMEBODY> his/her/its <DIRECT OBJECT>.’

  Plural 3rd person personal pronouns CANNOT be omitted as objects (so an omitted 3rd person object pronoun can only be interpreted as a singular object):
  Látod Őket? '<Can you<SUBJECT> see them<OBJECT>?’
  Elfeléjeztetek Őket. '<They<SUBJECT> forgot them<OBJECT>.’
23. Constructions and Sentences

23.4 Negatives

Negatives are formed with nem ‘no, not’.

Nem usually precedes the word it modifies:

Amerikába mentem meglátogatni a barátonomat.
‘I went to America to visit my friend.’

Nem mentem Amerikába meglátogatni a barátonomat.
‘I didn’t go to America to visit my friend’ (= I didn’t go)

Nem Amerikába mentem meglátogatni a barátonomat.
‘I didn’t go to America to visit my friend.’ (= not to America)

Nem a barátonomat megítéltem nem Amerikába.
‘I didn’t go to America to visit my friend.’ (= not to visit my friend)

In neutral sentences nem immediately precedes the conjugated verb it modifies.

Péter olvasta a könyvet.
‘Peter has read the book.’

Péter nem olvasta a könyvet.
‘Peter has not read the book.’

Even preverbs cannot occur between the nem and the conjugated verb (See Section 23.6 on the position of preverbs in negative sentences):
23. Constructions and Sentences

Péter elolvasta a könyvet. ‘Peter has read the book.’
Péter nem olvasta el a könyvet. ‘Peter has not read the book.’

With imperatives ne is used instead of nem:

Ne menj el! ‘Don’t go away!’
Ne is lássalak! ‘I don’t want to see you.’

Note that the negative of the verb van in the 3rd person singular present is nincs if van is used in the sense ‘have’ or if it is followed by an adverbial (usually of space):

Nincs repülője. ‘(S)he does not have an aeroplane.’
Nincs Amerikában. ‘(S)he is not in America.’

Note that double negation is used with negative pronouns in Hungarian: Senkit sem láttam. ‘I have not seen anybody.’

23.5 Infinitival Constructions, Auxiliaries

Infinitives may occur in combination with

(a) conjugated verbs:

Ök menni akarnak. ‘They want to go.’ and

(b) ‘complex verbs’, i.e. nominal + conjugated van ‘be’ constructions:

Én kész vagyok megpróbálni. ‘I am ready to try.’

Note that the ‘be’ verb (copula) of complex verbs is missing in the present 3rd persons (see Section 23.7.2):

Ö kész meghalni. ‘He is ready to die.’
Ök készek meghalni. ‘They are ready to die.’

Infinitival constructions often behave like auxiliaries and have ‘auxiliary-like’ meanings.

23.5.1 The Non-dative Class of Verbs

Some verbs and complex verbs in infinitival constructions take a nominative subject and an impersonal infinitive (see Section 17.3.1). These

verbs and complex verbs can take all person/number suffixes (1st, 2nd, 3rd):

(Én) akarok teniszerni.
‘I want to play tennis.’

(Ők) utálnak teniszerni.
‘They want to play tennis.’

János utál teniszerni.
‘John hates to play tennis.’

(Te) kénytelen vagy teniszerni.
‘You have no choice but to play tennis.’

(Mi) kénytelenek voltunk teniszerni.
‘We had no choice but to play tennis.’

(Mi) képes leszek teniszerni.
‘I will be able to play tennis.’

Note that if the van ‘be’ part of a complex verb is in the plural, then the nominal part must occur in the plural too:

(Mi) kénytelenek voltunk teniszerni.
‘We had no choice but to play tennis.’

(Ők) képesek leszek teniszerni.
‘They will be able to play tennis.’

The following is a list of some common verbs of this type (complex verbs are indicated by the mark ‘+VAN’ after the nominal):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>akar</th>
<th>‘want’</th>
<th>iparokodik</th>
<th>‘do one’s best to’</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bátorodik</td>
<td>‘dare’</td>
<td>kénytelen +VAN</td>
<td>‘have no choice but’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bír</td>
<td>‘be able to’</td>
<td>kész +VAN</td>
<td>‘be capable of, have’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elfelejt</td>
<td>‘forget’</td>
<td>készül</td>
<td>‘the cheek to’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elkesz</td>
<td>‘start’</td>
<td>kezd</td>
<td>‘be ready to’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>enged</td>
<td>‘allow’</td>
<td>kénytelen</td>
<td>‘be prepared to’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fel</td>
<td>‘be afraid’</td>
<td>köteleves +VAN</td>
<td>‘start’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fog</td>
<td>‘shall, will’</td>
<td>(meg)próbál</td>
<td>‘wish’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gyüjtől</td>
<td>‘hate’</td>
<td>(meg)tanul</td>
<td>‘be obliged to’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hagy</td>
<td>‘let, allow’</td>
<td>megy</td>
<td>‘try’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hajlandó +VAN</td>
<td>‘can be persuaded to’</td>
<td>(meg)tanul</td>
<td>‘learn’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>igyekszik</td>
<td>‘do one’s best to’</td>
<td>megy</td>
<td>‘go’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imád</td>
<td>‘love’</td>
<td>mer</td>
<td>‘dare’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
23. Constructions and Sentences

23.5.2 The Dative Class of Verbs

Some verbs and complex verbs in infinitival constructions take a dative subject and an impersonal infinitive or, alternatively, a dative subject and a personal infinitive (see Section 17.1.2). The subject can be omitted if the personal infinitive is used. These verbs and complex verbs have a limited conjugation: they can occur in all tenses/moods, but only in the 3rd person singular:

- Nekünk hasznos lesz elolvasni a könyvet.
  "It will be useful for us to read the book."
  (Nekünk) hasznos lesz elolvasnunk a könyvet.

  Note that both constructions described above allow another dative in the same sentence meaning recipient 'to/for somebody':

- Nekem kell írni neked.
  "I have to write to you."
  (Nekem) írnom kell neked.

In the first impersonal construction this may result in ambiguity as a single dative may be interpreted as subject or as recipient (because the subject may be optionally left out, see Section 23.2):

- Nekem kell írni.
  "I have to write to somebody." or "Somebody has to write to me."

The following is a list of some common verbs of this type (complex verbs are indicated by the mark '+VAN after the nominal):

- érdemes +VAN
- faj
- hasznos +VAN
- ideje +VAN
- illik
- jö +VAN
- jólesik
- kár +VAN
- kell
- kénye
- könnyű +VAN
- lehet
- muszaj +VAN
- nehéz +VAN
- rossz +VAN
- sikerül
- szabad +VAN
- szükségesség +VAN
- szükségességet +VAN
- tetszik
- tilos +VAN

23.5.3 Separators

Some of the conjugated verbs that occur in infinitival constructions are separators: they separate the a preverb from its verb and stand between the preverb and its verb.

- Júlia el akarja elolvasni a könyvet.
  "Julia wants to read the book."
- Júliának el kellett elolvasni(a) a könyvet.
  "Julia had to read the book."
- Júliának el szabad elolvasni(a) a könyvet.
  "Julia is allowed to read the book."

Note that the verb szokott only has past forms.
23. Constructions and Sentences

Compare constructions with verbs that are not separators:

Júlia imádja elolvasni a könyvet.
‘Julia loves reading the book.’

!No!Júlia el imádja elolvasni a könyvet.

Júliának jólesik elolvasni(a) a könyvet.
‘Julia feels good reading the book.’

!No!Júliának el jólesik elolvasni(a) a könyvet.

Júliának tílos elolvasni(a) a könyvet.
‘It is forbidden for Julia to read the book.’

!No!Júliának el tílos elolvasni(a) a könyvet.

Of the verbs and complex verbs discussed above, the following ones are separators in standard Hungarian:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>akar</th>
<th>lehet</th>
<th>szokott</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bir</td>
<td>mer</td>
<td>tetszik</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fog</td>
<td>óhajt</td>
<td>tud</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kell</td>
<td>szabad +VAN</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kéne</td>
<td>szeretné</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

23.6 Word Order

The principles governing Hungarian word order are different from those in English. The sequence of words in a Hungarian sentence may vary considerably. However, the order is only (relatively) free after the verb. The ‘theme’, which is called the topic of the sentence, precedes the actual statement or question (the comment) about the topic. The comment always begins with a stressed word. The topic of the sentence is not compulsory.

PetéT TOPIC olvasom egy könyvet.COMMENT Láttam egy színdarabot.COMMENT

The word or group of words that carry the essential piece of new information (called focus), the emphasis of the sentence as it were, always immediately precedes the conjugated verb (in the following examples the focus is capitalized):

Én akarok beszélni Kristóffal.
‘I want to talk to Christopher.’

Én BESZÉLNI akarok Kristóffal.
‘I want to TALK to Christopher.’

Én KRISTÓFFAL akarok beszélni.
‘I want to talk to CHRISTOPHER.’

The position of preverbs (see Chapter 21) depends on the focus of the sentence. A preverb is in initial position in the word if the verb is in focus or if there is no special emphasis in the sentence:

Én MEGIZOM, nem köntöm.
‘I’ll DRINK it up and not spill it.’

Holnap felpróbálom.
‘I’ll try it on tomorrow.’

Yes-no questions always have this word order:

Felveszi valaki a telefont?
‘Will someone pick up the phone?’

If another word or group of words is the focus, the verbal prefix follows the verb (this always happens if the verb is negated because anything negative tends to be focussed):

A MÁSIK KÖNYVET olvasom el.
‘I’ll read the OTHER BOOK.’

NEM veszem fel a telefont.
‘I will NOT pick up the phone.’

Imperatives always have this word order:

Olvas el a könyvet!
‘Read the book!’

Vedd fel a telefont!
‘Pick up the phone!’

Separators (see Section 23.5.3) come between the verbal prefix and the verb if the verb and the prefix are the focus of the sentence or if the sentence is neutral:

Abba akarom hagyni.
‘I want to stop doing it.’

Meg fogja tanulni.
‘She/he/it will learn it.’
23. Constructions and Sentences

Meg tudod csinálni.
‘You can do it.’

However, separation does not happen if any other part of the sentence is the focus and then separators come between the focus and the prefix+verb combination:

JÚLIA fogja megtaulálni.
‘JULIA will learn it.’

NEM tudod megcsinálni.
‘You can NOT do it.’

MÁST akarok abbatagyni.
‘I want to stop doing something else.’

23.7 Constructions with van

The copula van may mean ‘have, possess’ or ‘be’.

23.7.1 ‘have, possess’

The possessive meaning ‘have got’ is expressed by the verb van. In these sentences, the possessor is in the dative (if it appears in the sentence), van is in the 3rd person, and the possessed thing takes the possessive ending agreeing with the person of the possessor:

Nekem van egy kutyám.
‘I have a dog.’

Neked van egy kutyád.
‘You have a dog.’

Neki van egy kutyája.
‘(S)He/It has a dog.’

Nekünk van egy kutyánk.
‘We have a dog.’

Nekték van egy kutyátok.
‘You have a dog.’

Nekik van egy kutyájuk.
‘They have a dog.’

The negation of van is nincs, the plurals are vannak and nincsenek respectively (the verb has to agree in number with the number of the possessed):

Neked vannak kutyáid.
‘You have dogs.’

Neked nincsenek kutyáid.
‘You don’t have dogs.’

23.7.2 ‘be’

The verb van does not appear in the third person singular and plural in the present tense in sentences where it means ‘be’ and it has a subject complement noun or adjective:

Én szerény vagyok.
‘I am modest.’

Ő szerény volt.
‘He was modest.’

Ő szerény lesz.
‘He will be modest.’

but

Ő szerény.
‘He is modest.’

Ő nem szerény.
‘He is not modest.’

Ők szerények.
‘They are modest.’

Note that van is never left out if it means ‘have, possess’: Neki van egy tolla. ‘(S)He has a pen’, or if it means ‘made of’ Az asztal üvegből van. ‘The table is made of glass.’

Van, vannak, nincs, nincsenek are retained in the sense ‘be’ in the 3rd person present

• if they have an adverbial of space:

Kristóf a szobában van.
‘Christopher is in the room.’

A fiúk a bányaiban vannak.
‘The boys are in the mine.’

• if they receive emphasis in comparative sentences:

Péter VAN olyan okos, mint Tamás.
‘Peter IS as clever as Thomas.’

Péter NINCS olyan okos, mint Tamás.
‘Peter ISN’T as clever as Thomas.’

Compare the emphatic:

Péter olyan okos, mint Tamás.
‘Peter is as clever as Thomas.’

Péter nem olyan okos, mint Tamás.
‘Peter isn’t as clever as Thomas.’

• in sentences asserting that something exists or does not exist

Van élet a Marson.
‘There is life on Mars.’
23. Constructions and Sentences

Boszorkányok nincsenek.
‘Witches do not exist.’

- in sentences like the following:

7 óra van.
‘It is 7 o’clock.’

Péntek van.
‘It is Friday.’

2002 van.
‘It is 2002.’

Vihar van.
‘There is a storm.’

Buli van.
‘There is a party.’

Dél van.
‘It is noon.’

Július van.
‘It is July.’

Meleg van.
‘It is hot.’

Szél van.
‘There is a wind blowing.’

Baj van.
‘There is something wrong.’

23.7.3 Van with an Adverbial Participle

Van can occur with an adverbial participle (see Section 17.2.4) to describe a state of the subject. In a passive sentence, this type of van separates a preverb from its verb stem (which takes the -val-ve of the participle).

A tévé be van kapcsolva.
‘The television is switched on.’

Meg lezettek lepve.
‘You will be surprised.’

Az ablakok be vanak törve.
‘The windows are broken.’

A levél még nincs megírva.
‘The letter has not been written.’

INDEX OF SUBJECTS

- initial suffixes 75, 76, 92, 93, 94, 95, 100, 101, 102, 103, 126, 128, 129, 133
- 1sg subject 2sg/pl object 76, 85, 90, 102
- ablative 25, 42, 45, 48, 49, 51
- accusative 15, 24, 25, 27, 28, 30, 32, 33, 35, 36, 39, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 58, 64, 65, 80, 143, 145, 146
- active (present) participle 114, 130, 156
- active participle 156
- ad- -ed-final verbs 79, 81, 82
- adessive 25, 45, 48, 49, 51, 62
- adjectives 57, 58, 60, 61, 62, 65, 114, 115, 157, 159, 170
- adjectives; denoting nationalities 58
- adverbs 53, 54, 51, 62, 63, 143, 159
- adverbial participle 115, 171, 172
- affrication 11, 30, 119
- allative 25, 26, 45, 48, 49
- alphabet 7 alternative stems 13, 22, 32, 112, 127, 128
- anti-harmonic stems 14, 60, 131, 132
- article 16, 17, 18
- associative 25, 28, 29, 46, 48, 49
- auxiliaries 111, 138, 164
- back vowel stems 13, 20, 21, 75, 77, 88, 90, 96
- cardinal numbers 64
- case 16, 19, 24, 25, 26, 45, 46, 48, 49, 50, 52, 53, 56, 57, 58
- causal-final 24, 25, 33, 35, 36, 45, 48
- causative 138, 139
- clauses of purpose 109

cluster-final stems 74, 77, 82, 83, 86, 99
comment 168
comparative 58, 59, 60, 61, 171
comparative constructions 62
complex verbs 25, 164, 165, 166
conditional construction 90, 107, 108
conditional suffix 86, 87, 88, 89
conjunctive-imperative 68, 69, 92, 96, 100, 102, 103, 108, 109, 110, 116, 125, 133, 134
conjunctive-imperative definite 94, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 104, 133, 134
conjunctive-imperative definite verb forms 95
conjunctive-imperative indefinite 92, 93, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 104, 133, 134
consonant cluster 7, 23, 28, 74, 75, 76, 77, 80, 82, 83, 86, 93, 96, 98, 99, 100, 111, 124
constructions 71, 125, 160, 162, 166, 170 copula 164, 170
Czük stem 112, 114, 127, 128
Czük verbs 127
dative 24, 25, 45, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 58, 161, 166, 170
dative class of verbs 166
defective stems 125, 126, 127
definite article 16, 17, 18, 63, 71, 153, 161
definite conjugation 69, 70, 71, 76, 89, 90, 135
INDEX OF SUBJECTS

sublative 25, 26, 45, 48, 49, 80
superlative 25, 28, 29, 30, 36, 42, 45, 48, 49
syntactic cases 25
ss, s assimilation 11
sz/d and sz/z stems 127, 130, 153
sz/d stems 130
sz/div and sz/ziv stems 114, 130
sz/z stems 22, 74, 76, 93, 95, 130
sz/ziv stems 130
t-class of -adi-ed-final verbs 79
temporal 25, 26, 27, 45, 48, 49
tense/mood 68, 69, 73, 78, 86, 92, 106, 165
terminative 25, 26, 33, 35, 36, 45, 48
t-final verbs 74, 82, 83, 88, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 112
topic 168
translative 24, 25, 27, 45, 48, 51
universal pronouns 55, 72
unrounding stems 37
unstable vowel 20, 21, 27, 28, 30, 32, 33, 34, 39, 59, 119, 120, 122
usage: Tenses, Conditional, Conjunctive-Imperative 70, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110
-uszíl-ősszík verbs 129
v-adding verb stems 35
v-initial suffixes 29, 32, 34, 35, 36
vowel shortening stems 32, 36, 37, 60, 65
vowel-deleting -ik stems 75, 88, 112, 117, 121
vowel-deleting stems 28, 32, 33, 34, 37, 65, 75, 77, 83, 88, 112, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 152
vowel-to-v stems 36
v-stems 32, 35, 60, 78
Vvzík verbs 129
Vv-class of -adi-ed-final verbs 79, 81
wh-questions 51, 162
wishes 108
word formation 146-159
word order 106
yes-no questions 109, 163, 169
zero suffix 19, 68, 73, 116, 132

INDEX OF WORDS

abba 141, 169
ad 9, 11, 12, 25, 26, 73, 75, 81
afféle 44
dág 31
dagár 31, 36
daggi 58
dagyi 31
dgyi 11, 31
dgoson 141
dhany 52
dhanyadik 52
ahogy(ant) 53
ahol 53
ahonnan 53, 54
ahova 53
ahová 53
ajak 32, 33
ajtó 16, 37
akárhányadik 54
akaráta 54
akármukora 54
akármely 54
akármelyik 54
akármennyi 54
akármű 54
akárműfélé 54
akárműfolyan 54
akárm 52
akkor 44
alá 41, 43, 141
alapezik 117, 127, 130
alatt 41, 43
alkot 83, 97, 98
alkusz 117, 129, 130
alól 41, 43
alom 33
alsó 60
alszik 117, 127, 129, 130, 166
alud 81, 128
alusszik 129, 130
ameddige 53
amekkora 52
amely 52
amelyik 52
amennyi 52
amerre 53
amerről 53
amettel 53
ami 52
amijéz 52
ami december 53, 54
amilyen 52
amióta 53
andróka 123
anya 38, 39
annyira 44, 71
apró 15, 38, 39
ár 31
áramlik 117, 123
ardnyilak 117, 123
árvé 51
átruk 33
átrul 42, 141, 143
átháramlik 126
átuk 33
az 45
ázik 117
bagoly 33
báj 31
bajusz 32, 33
bánnik 117
bárhányadik 54
bárkira 54
bármenné 54
bármennyeik 54
bármenny 54
bárrl 54
bármiféle 54
bármilyen 54
bármetsz 136
bász 117
bérl 33
bélt 12, 39
béle 141, 143
becsmevel 123
bessz 123
befellegzik 126
bélf 31, 36
bele 141, 143
bels 60
bélül 42
belyegez 123
ben 61
ben 61
bírő 39, 40
birodalom 33
bizá 117
bocsát 74, 83, 112
bogár 31, 36
bokor 22, 32, 33
bomlik 117, 123
bort 38
botl 117, 123
bő 60
bőj 117
bük 117
buzog 123
büz 117, 126